This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.

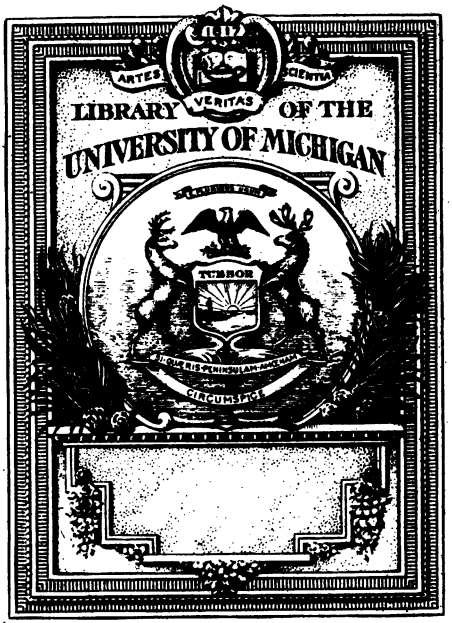
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.

+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.

+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`


ARTES
VERITAS
SCIENTIA
LIBRARY OF THE
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN

MISCELLANIES

Historical and Philological:

Being a Curious

COLLECTION

OF

Private Papers

Found in the

STUDY of a NOBLE-MAN,

Lately Deceas'd.

LONDON:

Printed for *J. T.* and sold by the Booksellers of *London* and *Westminster*, 1703.

DA
25
.Z5
1703
M6

Reference-stacks
Helen
7-23-51
75566

THE PREFACE.

THE following Papers might very well venture Abroad without a Preface, ſince They carry their own Recommendation in the Frontiſpiece: However, the Stationers inſiſting, That 'tis neither uſual nor handſom to let the *Courteous Reader* jump from the Title Page to the Body of the Book without an

an Introductory Compliment, the Publiſher, in compliance to Cuſtom and Good Manners, thinks it proper to let the World know, That this Collection was found among the Manuſcripts of the late Famous M——— of *H*———: Which Circumſtance alone is ſufficient to give an honourable Diſtinction to theſe valuable Pieces.

One Thing more will recommend them to the Publick; and that is, the *UTILE DULCI* of *Horace*, which the candid

did Reader will find in the Variety of their Subjects.

THE

THE CONTENTS.

I. *SIR* Henry Sheere's *Diſcourſe of the* Mediterranian *Sea, and the Streights of* Gibralter, pag. 1.

II. *Divers remarkable Orders of the Ladies at Spring-Garden in Parliament aſſembled: Together with certain Votes of the unlawful Aſſembly at* Kate's *in* Covent-Garden. *Both ſent abroad to prevent Miſinformation*, p. 43.

III. *The Apology of the Duke of* Lauderdaile, p. 56.

IV. *The Patent of Creation of* Thomas Howard, *Earl of* Surrey, *Duke of* Norfolk, 5 H. 8. p. 61.

V. *An Act concerning the Title, Name, and Dignity of the Earl of* Arundell, p. 63.

VI. *A Copy of a Commiſſion for General, to* George *Duke of* Albemarle, &c. *granted by K.* Charles *the Second*, Aug. 1660. p. 65.

VII. *Secret*

VII. *Secret Tranſactions in relation to King* Charles *the Firſt: Written by Sir* John Bowring, *Knight*, p. 78.

VIII. *An Advertiſement, written to a Secretary of the Lord Treaſurer's in* England, *concerning Seminary Prieſts: As alſo, a Letter written by the Lord Treaſurer, in Defence of the Nobility and Gentry, intercepted: Publiſhed and Anſwered by the Papiſts*, An. Dom. 1592. p. 163.

IX. *A Grant of the Arms to the Family of* Greſham *in* Surrey, p. 175.

X. *The humble Petition of the inferiour Clergy of this Nation to the Parliament*, p. 177.

XI. *A Copy of the Charter to the* Eaſt-India *Company*, 13 *Car.* 2. p. 179.

Sir

Sir *HENRY SHEERE's*

DISCOURSE

OF THE

MEDITERANIAN SEA,

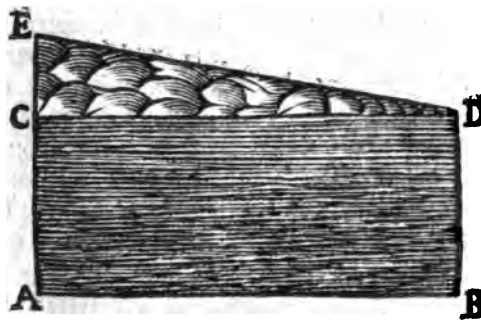
AND THE

Streights of *GIBRALTAR.*

THE most Learned *Gallileus*, by a familiar Demonstration granting his Systeme of the World, resolves that great *Phenomenon* of Nature, the Flux and Reflux of the Ocean; the Speculation whereof [as History tells us,] cost the Famous *Aristotle* so dear: And, albeit, these and multitudes of other successful Inquirers into Nature, have enlightned the World with Volumes of admirable Discoveries highly conducing to the Felicity of the present Age, yet either not convinced of the Fact, or wanting Years of Residence upon the Place, which I have had, to perfect their Observations, none that I have read, or heard of, have ever yet publish'd any

Reaſons to the purpoſe touching this uſeful Subject. It will appear therefore at firſt ſight, upon the Contemplation of barely Matter of Fact, a very knotty Propoſition, how it ſhould come to paſs, that a Lake or Stagnant Water, [for ſuch we may eſteem the *Mediterranian*,] ſupplyed by the Tribute of above One hundred and fifty Rivers, many whereof reckoned amongſt the greateſt of the World, ſhould not only not diſcover a very manifeſt Superfluity by a violent diſemboguing into the *Atlantick* Sea by the Streight of *Gibraltar*, but on the contrary, a Thirſt for the moſt part, and want of greater Supply, as appears by an almoſt conſtant Current running directly in ſo ſtrong in the Narrow or Straight, that in ſome Seaſons of the Year no Boat with ten Oars can ſtem it, and in Calms, after a ſtrong Levant is perceived, as high up as *Majorca*. Mariners, who are moſt converſant in this Element, are very poſitive in their Aſſertions, affirming, that there is a Diſemboguing, and that it is performed by a counter Current or inviſible Stream ſome ſpace beneath the Surface running continually back, and think they have the Authority of a Demonſtration for this Opinion, from a vulgar Experiment they make by letting fall an Anchor, and veering but two or three Cables; and, albeit, the Anchor came not near the Bottom; yet they found that the Ship's Way or Motion, became by this means very much retarded, which was evident by their now ſtemming the Current, which before carried them along with it. This Experiment at firſt View, one would think, ought to yield Reaſon plauſible enough to back the Opinion of a counter Current; but an eaſie Demonſtration will detect the Fallacy, and plainly evince how tamely Mankind

kind will be carried to the Belief of Impoſſibilities, [than which in Nature there is ſcarce a greater,] rather than ſeem unfurniſhed with a Reaſon. But I muſt firſt premiſe, for the better obviating my Demonſtration, that I do not diſcourſe of over Falls or Precipices where the Water is hurried and caſt down by the extraordinary Declivity of the Channel that conveys it, but of a level even Bottom at leaſt, ſuch as by the great depth of Water it contains, cannot be thought to have the leaſt influence upon the Superficies, as may be inſtanced in the *Thames*, and many other Rivers, where the Tydes by ebbing and flowing indifferently, plainly demonſtrate, that the Water receives not the leaſt Motion in its Courſe backward and forward, but from the Declivity of its own proper Surface; and, albeit, the Bottom happen to be in ſome places High, in others Low, and generally Irregular, yet it is viſible, that in deep Rivers the Surface conceals theſe Unevenneſſes by a ſmooth Gliding up and down, without manifeſting the leaſt Diſturbance.



This being therefore premiſed, and neceſſarily granted, we may proceed to our Demonſtration;

wherein let the Figure A B C D E be the Profile of a Lake, or Sea, into which there runs a Current from ſome higher Superficies. A B we call the Bottom of this Lake, which here for Evidence ſake we make Level. C D we will ſuppoſe to be the Surface of a Body of Water contain'd in the ſaid Lake, which being alſo levell'd and parallel to A B, is conſequently in a poſition of Quietude, and cannot poſſible admit of any Motion that is not violent, as from the agitation of the Winds, or ſome exteriour Impulſe; the acceſſion of Water therefore from the Source above the Level of this, is only capable of giving any natural Motion to this Water; and ſuppoſing this new Acceſſion to begin its Courſe at C, moving towards D, by which the Current is alſo begotten, but this Current cannot poſſibly have any, or but very light Motion beneath the Level Line C D. For by the many excellent Experiments in *Hydroſtaticks*, Water admits of little or no compreſſion or ſhrinking into leſs room. We muſt therefore conclude, that ſince the Line B D, the Bounds and Limits made by the utmoſt Shore, preſcribe a fix'd Station in this Body of Water, then muſt all that is New and Additional be continued upon the Surface, where it encounters with nothing but Air and more rarify'd Medium, and leſs able to reſiſt this Motion *per declive*. Hence therefore it glides without Interruption, and makes a Triangle C D E. The Angle at D being the Angle of Declivity, and making the Level Line C D the Radius, E C is the Tangent of the Angle of Declivity, and the upmoſt depth of the Current beneath the Surface; and hence it comes to paſs, that the Anchor and Cable ſinking beneath the Level Line C D, is

check'd

check'd by the ſtagnant or quiet Water, and the Ship's Motion conſequently retarded: For no Man that will but give himſelf leiſure to think, can conceive ſo groſs and palpable an Abſurdity as the Motion of a Counter Current, ſince every Drop ſo moving muſt by miraculous, or ſome very occult Power lift and preſs up a Column of Water commenſurate with its Depth, or Diſtance beneath the Surface, before it can move an Hair's breadth, and ſo muſt thruſt forward like a Strong-man in a Crowd, which is a fond Opinion: For from ſuch an Hypotheſis, might be argued, that Water may be ſupplied from a Source beneath the Level of its own Surface, which is impoſſible: But this may be illuſtrated by a familiar Experiment, which I am perſuaded will ſet us out of the reach of Diſpute. Suppoſe the Line of Declivity E D in the Figure aforeſaid, to be the Surface of the River of *Thames* at about half Ebb, for then the Tyde runs quickeſt, to prove that the Water at ſome Diſtance beneath either ſtands ſtill, or moves but very ſlowly, I proceeded thus: I took a hollow Cane, which being light was propereſt for this purpoſe, and cut it to about ten Foot long, and with a piece of Cork of about ſix Inches ſquare, with a hole in the middle, through which I thruſt the Cane, I fix'd it about the middle of the Cane; then for the end which was to be Immers'd, or Underwater, I added ſuch a quantity of Lead as in Still-water ſhould diſpoſe it, and make it hang directly perpendicular, which by the half of the Cane that was prominent or out of the Water, did plainly appear; and adding alſo three thin pieces of Wood like Fins, to give the Water the more power upon the Lower End, I carried it out

in a Boat, and placed it in the middle of the Stream, where, inſtead of ſwimming perpendicular as it did in Still-water, it drove with the Tyde in the manner deſcribed in the Figure, the Part Above-water leaning down the Stream towards D, which was occaſioned by the Immers'd Part of the Canes being got either into Stagnant-water, or at leaſt not influenced, and carried along by ſo quick a Current as upon the Superficies which convey'd the Cork, which neceſſarily occaſioned the lower Part of the Cane to trail and lag behind, whereof the ſtooping and leaning forward of the prominent Part is an invincible Demonſtration; and this I hope may ſuffice, to evince at once the ungrounded Errour of the Opinion of a Counter Current, by reſolving the Seaman's Experiment by Reaſon, and Demonſtration, and by neceſſity of a limited and aſſign'd Diſtance of a Stagnant-ſurface from a Superficies, put into motion by its own Declivity: But how the ſeveral Angles from the Surface differ in their various Effects downwards to the Horizontal Superficies, what Motion to aſſign and appropriate to the reſpective Angles, and what Influence the Power of Continuity may have in relation to the agitating Water yet lower than the Level Superficies which hath been aſſign'd in the Figure, is humbly referr'd to a more Learned and Accurate Diſquiſition.

The next Reaſon contended by ſome, is, that the Water carried into the *Mediterranian* by this Current, is reconvey'd to the Ocean again by ſome Subterraneous Paſſage; but this is ſo feeble and defective of Argument, that it has but few Aſſerters, and ſeeming rather a Refuge for Conjecture than any ſolid Foundation of Truth,

is not worth a Reply further than to obſerve, that ſince Nature doth nothing in vain, it would be an idle Suppoſition to think, ſo vaſt a quantity of Water ſhould be hurried into the *Mediterranian* for no other Reaſon but to be hurried out again; it ſeemeth alſo full as vain to ſuppoſe a Paſſage through ſo vaſt a Continent as invirons this Sea, and what is more concluding, were there ſuch a Paſſage through the Continent, the *Levant* Winds, which always blow counter to the Current, would by the Oppoſition it gives, manifeſtly retard its Motion; but on the contrary, they wonderfully increaſe it, becoming almoſt rapid upon a *Levant* Storm, and by a long Weſterly Wind, [which but ſeldom happens,] that ought in common Reaſon to uſher and aſſiſt its Motion, it will gradually and manifeſtly decline, till at length ſcarce any Current is to be perceived. A *Phænomenon* of much ſeeming Repugnancy to the general Meaſure of Reaſon. But I ſhall endeavour that no ſolid Objection be omitted nor unanſwered in place convenient; in the mean time, I ſhall treat of nothing but the naked Hiſtory of Matter of Fact, as it lies for the moſt part before me in my Journal, being the Fruit of ſome Years diligent Inquiry and Obſervation upon the place.

1. Then I obſerve that there is a Current, but not running always into the *Mediterranian*.

2. There is at ſometimes an orderly Ebbing and Flowing.

3. At other times a Current running directly out of the *Mediterranian*; the Reaſons of which Variety, I ſhall treat of with the beſt Method I can.

First it is observable, that the Current running into the *Streight*, [which is ever strongest about our Summer Solstice,] holds good, for about nine Months of the twelve; and hence we may be instructed to acquit the unwary Mariner, [from whose Report the World takes up their Opinions,] who finding for the most part a Westerly Wind, especially in Summer-Voyages, is easily drawn to make this imperfect Observation the General Standard of Truth; and no People are more tenacious of their Opinions, when they have once avow'd them, than Seafaring-men, which entertaining at first by the Tradition of some forward Pilot, and confirm'd by some slight Remarks of their own, grow as sturdy and deaf to all the Reason and Argument that can be employ'd to undeceive them, as the Elements wherein they converse. This Apology is justly due to them, who are persuaded into a Belief that the Current runs perpetually into the *Streight*; but among many sufficient Instances, I might recite of the contrary, I shall here make use but of one Example, and that a Person, who for his Eminence in Sea-Affairs we may securely rely upon, Sir *John Harman* by Name, an Excellent Mariner, of a very sound Understanding in all the necessary Principles of his Profession, who being of the General Opinion, that the Current run constantly in, happened about the Winter Solstice to be becalm'd in the Evening, somewhat Easterly off *Ceuta*, a *Spanish* Garison upon the Coast of *Barbary*, just within the Narrow, and expecting by Morning to find himself shot considerably to the Eastwards by the Current, found, to his Astonishment, he had been carried Westernly as far out as Cape *Spartell*, which Eastern Current was by

by computation, almoſt as ſtrong as it ordinarily uſed, to run from the Weſtward. The *Spaniards* that live at *Tariffa*, and almoſt on the very Point of the Narrow, with whom I have often convers'd upon the Place, and who daily paſs from Shore to Shore, do avow, That at certain times in the Winter Seaſon, they take their Slatches of Flood and Ebb according to their Occaſions, the Effects of the Tyde being manifeſt quite croſs the *Streight*, and Ships are ordinarily ſeen becalm'd in the Narrow to drive in and out with the Stream.

Theſe Truths being neceſſarily premis'd, what Structure now or Foundation of Argument will beſt ſuſtain this heap of Contrariety; and by what Clue of Reaſon we may be guided to Truth through ſo great a Labyrinth of Contradiction, is our next Task; how, I ſay, this Lake or Sea, ſupply'd by ſo vaſt a Flood, as accrues by the Water of ſo many Noble Rivers, ſhould not in the End run over.

Secondly, How it happens that it does not only not run over by diſemboguing and making a Current out at the *Streights* Mouth, but on the contrary, craves a yet greater Supply, as appears by an almoſt conſtant Current in, which Current we have Eſſay'd, to prove, cannot be diſcharg'd either by a Counter Current, or Subterranean Paſſage.

Thirdly, How it comes to paſs, that at other times there ſhould be an orderly Flux, and Reflux quite croſs the Narrow.

Fourthly, How it comes to paſs at other Seaſons to ſtand ſtill.

Fifthly, To run directly out.

And, Sixthly, [which is a great Truth,] By what Means the Current ſhould grow ſtronger, by how

how much the *Levant* Winds [which blow directly in Oppoſition,] grow ſtronger; and upon the coming up of a Weſternly Wind, which ſeems to further and uſher it in its Courſe, blowing directly Trade with it, ſhould not only not quicken it, but contrarily manifeſtly obſtruct its Courſe, inſomuch that in caſe it ſhould endure long, [which rarely happens,] it will at length languiſh into almoſt Still-water.

The Doctrine of Exhalation, and the marvellous Effects of the Sun and Fire upon moiſt Bodies, by what Law of Neceſſity that Active Element muſt breath and live by Air as we do, or it will expire; and by what Wings and Inſtruments of Motion the ignited Particles haſten to dip themſelves in the Neighbouring Stream, and having quench'd their Thirſt, take Wing, and mount again into another Region; whether all, or what proportion of this Moiſture ſo convey'd, returns to its Sourſe again, and how it is converted, and by what tedious, crooked, and untrac'd Journeys through that World of Variety it paſſes, it may return to the Sea again, is a Speculation not only Foreign to this Diſcourſe, but indeed too ſublime and metaphyſical for my Philoſophy. A Calculation of the Effects thereof in general, or in ſuch proportion as may aſſiſt towards the Solution of our propoſed *Phænomena*, is my preſent Task; in order to which I am led in the firſt place to take notice, That of all Continents in the Univerſe, [as may appear by the annex'd *Planiſphere*,] that of *Africa* labours moſt under the diſtreſs of Drouth, and Scarcity of Water, an Infelicity, I humbly believe, rather of Scituation than an Effect of *Cham*'s Curſe; for the Sea, the General Sourſe of Moiſture, and Parent of Fountains, Lakes,

Lakes, Rivers, &c. cannot diſpence her Moiſture to the Remote, as to the more Neighbouring Countries; and the Sun, by the Mediation of whoſe Influence this Bleſſing is convey'd to all the Habitable World, and by the Miniſtry of whoſe Light, Heat, and many other Noble Influences, the Univerſe ſeems to ſubſiſt, is only in this unhappy Region, the Harbinger of Deſtruction, and Inſtrument of Death and Deſolation; that the Tyranny of his fierce Beams reigning here uncontroul'd by thoſe intermediating Accidents, which conſpire to the Felicity of other Regions in the ſame Latitude that are not only Habitable, but deſirable from the Plenty they produce of all things neceſſary to Human Life, and Luxury; and the ſame Sun in the ſame Parallel, is deified for his Bounty, and deteſted for his Cruelty; the Reaſon whereof ſprings from a Cauſe obvious, and demonſtrable: Which to explain, we may firſt remark, That the greateſt and moſt extended Continent in the World, is to be found in *Africa* alone; and if we add to this the Continent of *Europe* alſo, which we may ſafely do, the *Streight* that ſeparates them not being of very material Conſequence, to yield Objection in this Propoſition, then may be found [as appears in the *Planiſphere* aforeſaid,] a Continent under one and the ſame Meridian, from the Latitude of thirty five Degrees Southern Latitude, to the Latitude of ſeventy two Degrees Northern Latitude, being upwards of Two thouſand Leagues, which is almoſt a third part of the Globe; whence it plainly appears, that the Sun in our Summer Solſtice, ſurveys in and near that Meridian almoſt twice as much Continent as in many other Parts of the World, beſides in whatſoever other Poſi-

tion,

tion. But to limit our Propoſition, we may conſider the Sun entering *Cancer*, which makes our Summer Solſtice, and in the Meridian in the Longitude of Cape *Bona, Eſperanſa*, the moſt Southernly Part of *Africa*, the Sun, I ſay, in this Poſition makes Noon throughout that Meridian, which extends from the Cape aforeſaid in the Latitude of thirty five Degrees South, to the moſt Northernly Point of Land in the Continent of *Europe*, and for ought we know in the Habitable World. This Propoſition well digeſted, will much inlighten us in the inſuing Arguments whereof our *Hypotheſis* is compoſed, by which it is to be hoped, the whole *Phenomenon* principally reſteth: For if the Sun-Beams are moſt vigorous when they fall with leaſt obliquity, which is paſt diſpute, and by inevitable conſequence, his Influence upon Moiſt Bodies by Exhalation augments in Reciprocal Proportion, then the Sun in the Meridian tranſmits his Heats in a more intenſe Degree than in any other Poſition; the Sun therefore in the Meridian, and culminating over this vaſt forementioned Continent, and when his Beams are moſt direct and piercing, and his Virtue to Exhale in the Aſcendent, is at one and the ſame inſtant in a Poſition wherein the World ſtands in the greateſt need of his favourable Influence, and by which, above all the Points of the Heavens beſides, through which he takes his Courſe, he is rendred moſt unable to Communicate; but by the Law of fatal Neceſſity, muſt at the ſame moment be the Author of the two Extreams of Drouth and Moiſture, for which he ſurveys ſo vaſt a Continent, the Sea, the Treaſure, and the Univerſal Source of Moiſture is conſequently then moſt remote, and feels leaſt the Power

Power of his Meridian Influence; and whilſt in the Northern Regions, his feeble and imperfect Exhalations keep the Country in a perpetual Miſt, and almoſt drowned by the Exceſs of Moiſture, the more Southern are ſcorched to Cynders, and the Expiring Inhabitants dying of Hunger, and Thirſt, and for want of Air cool enough to breath in: And hence may be ſafely inferr'd the Reaſon, why *France* and *Italy* are Countries ſo Fruitful and Delicious, and *Spain* for the moſt part ſo Barren and Thirſty, and in ſome Seaſons almoſt quite ſcorch'd up; it being a Vulgar Errour to conceive this a bare Effect of the Sun's Vicinity, but the Fatality of Scituation; there being Regions in the World under the Equinoctial, where it Rains nine Months in the Year; for the Moiſture exhal'd from the Northern Sea by the Sun's unactive Heat, is ſoon by the natural Predominance of Continuity reſolv'd into thick and ſolid Clouds, and quickly grows too weighty in the Collective Maſs, to be tranſported, or held aloft, and therefore makes but ſlow Advances and Marches, but by degrees, towards the Sun that gives it Motion, but ſtoops and falls to the Earth again, till by many ſhort repeated Flights [the Store ſtill exhauſted by the way,] it diminiſh at length to a Degree, or Proportion adjuſted to that Temper of Clime which conſtitutes a Region fruitful and delicious; and ſuch is *France* and *Italy*: And this is the true demonſtrable Scale of Climates. And hence [as by *Egyptian* Column of Gradation, by which they make a Judgment of the State of the enſuing Year by the Degrees of the *Nile*'s Inundation,] may be beſt calculated and ſtated, the Prognoſticks of the Temperature and Conſtitution of Countries, and ſo by a progreſſional Proportion,

portion, If the Continent ſtill continues, muſt it advance thence into degrees of Drouth and defect of Moiſture? Whereof *Spain* is an inſtance, having [as their beſt Hiſtories aſſure us,] been more than once diſpeopled by this Misfortune, it being the continuation of a vaſt Continent under and near the ſame Meridian, which is Eſſential to our *Hypotheſis*; and if we do not undervalue the Little *Streight* that divides the two vaſt Continents of *Europe* and *Africa*, we ſhall ſcarce collect Reaſon in relation to the Propoſition we are now diſcuſſing to underſtand them disjoint; but a ſtill continued Tract of Land yet Southernly, to the which Opinion we are the more eaſily led from our Obſervation, alſo of that ſtrict gradual Succeſſion of Drouth and Scarcity of Water, as enſues upon travelling up into the Country from the Coaſt of *Barbary*; a few Days Journey in ſome Parts, ſufficing to bring us into a Land deſert and uninhabitable from the want of Water, and the Bleſſings accruing by that needful Element: And here alſo we may reaſonably conclude, to have arrived within ſome tolerable Proſpect of the Solution of this *Phænomenon*, having by the eaſieſt and moſt obvious Method I can yet think of, rendered it more than probable, that the Deſert and ſcorch'd Regions of *Africa* are not ſo much from the Exceſs of Heat as the Default of Moiſture, which Default is the Iſſue of a long continued Continent, as this is, under or very near one and the ſame Meridian; and it is not hard to make it out by this *Hypotheſis*, that albeit, the Sun's Heat be virtually and intrinſically the ſame through the reſpective Parallels wherein he moves, yet the Accidents attending the Poſition and Situation of Countries, *&c.* mainly conſpire in its Regu-

Regulation; whence [as is obſerved] there are Countries under or near the Equinoctial, where it Rains perpetually, and others where it ſcarce ever Rains at all; and thus Reaſoning, may be inferr'd, that in caſe the Continent of *Europe*, as it is a vaſt extended Tract of Land, were an open Ocean, then would *Africa* abound with Water, and, as it is now generally a Deſert, would be then a Country not only univerſally habitable, but deſirable, flowing and abounding with plenty of all Things.

Thus, having with as much Brevity and Perſpicuity as I could, traced Nature in this Progreſs of Variety, it being an Introduction ſo eſſential to our Diſcourſe, as not to be omitted without rendring our Concluſions lame and obſcure; we have our Labour rewarded with this fair *Hypotheſis*, [*viz.*] That ſince where the Sun's Heat is moſt Active and Intenſe, his Virtue by Exhalation is moſt Vigorous. From the Reaſons therefore already urged, his Influence about this Meridian is moſt predominant. No Sea therefore, or known great Water under the Heavens, can be thought to afford rationally ſo great an inſtance of this Effect of the Sun's Power, as the *Mediterranian* Sea, being bounded by a Country for 800 Leagues together, ſo parch'd at certain Seaſons, and deſtitute of Moiſture, that what the Sun Exhales, does not only not return again in any Proportion, as may be inferr'd by the few Rivers to be found upon that Coaſt, being quickly drunk up by the thirſty Earth, but by the haſty Conſumption of the Moiſture daily Exhal'd, ſcarce any Clouds are permitted together in the Summer-Seaſon, by which means the Sun's Beams dart with fiercer Heat, being leſs broken and rebated than in Mediums

diums not ſo much ratify'd; the Sea as well as Land being here the Scene of his ſcorching Influence, as many poor Seamen in their Navigations near the *Barbary* Coaſt in the Summer-time, do ſadly experiment, where they meet with dead Calms for twenty or thirty days together; and I have been aſſured by ſome *Turkiſh* Navigators, that they have been in one and the ſame inſtant under Three ſeveral Kinds of Deſpair, [*viz.*] To die of Thirſt; To be Shipwrack'd upon a Ledge of Neighbouring Rocks, towards which a great Swell of the Sea carried them; Or, to be ſcorch'd to Death by the exceſſive Heat of the Sun: The ſame Reaſon ſolving at once, the frequent and long Calms, and the exceeding Heat of the Weather; the Calms proceeding from want of due Collection of Moiſture, convertible by the Sun's Warmth into freſh Gales; and the Heat in a two-fold degree, augmented the thinneſs and tenuity of the Medium, not only admitting the Sun's Beams with leſs Impediment and Refraction, but conſpiring at the ſame time to a greater Intenſeneſs of his Heat from that defect of Moiſture; which being ratify'd into Wind, would with cool Breezes perpetually fan and refreſh the *Atmoſphere*.

And now, albeit, we have propos'd a *Theory* fram'd upon the ſoundeſt and moſt adequate Reaſons my Invention hath yet ſuggeſted, and which I am perſuaded, is not much from our purpoſe; yet becauſe Truth is ſo precious a Jewel, and the Mark towards which all Study and Speculation is for the moſt part directed, it would be to derogate from the Dignity of ſo Noble an Object, to ſit ſtill and quiet our ſelves in the bare Contemplation of an *Hypotheſis*, that a Happier and more

Learned

Learned Pen might refuſe, plauſibly enough; there being ſome witty Scepticks in Philoſophy, like great Maſters in Painting, who are apt to employ more Art and Fancy in the making a good Piece than a like Picture, and content themſelves to let the Elegancy and Ingenuity of the Deſign and Workmanſhip compound for the defect of Unlikeneſs. So in Matters of bare Speculation, theſe are apt to perplex the more eaſie and acceſſible Paths of Learning, and thinking it too cheap and vulgar an Acqueſt to meet naked Truth by Day, lead us darkling into Doubt and Errour by Terms and Subtilties, and after much painful Study and Inquiry we fare like Watermen in a Fog, whilſt we are anxious at Delay, fall at length unexpectedly upon a Coaſt more diſtant from our Port than the Place of our Departure; and this is the fatal Source of Errour, and hence have ſprung ſo many Volumes of vain *Hypotheſes* that in this Age are obtruded upon the World. Since therefore if over and above this Infelicity that attends generally Phiſiological Diſquiſitions, the moſt ſubtle and ſage Interpreters of Nature themſelves, eſpecially in Deſigns of this nature, are forced for the moſt part to be beholding to uncertain Relation for the principal Arguments of their Diſcourſes, and the Borrower is ever at the mercy of the Lender; my good hap therefore ſecuring me againſt the firſt Danger; the Point in hand being yet uncontroverted, and being out of the power of miſchief from the ſecond, every Argument I have, or ſhall raiſe in the progreſs of this Diſcourſe, being founded upon, and deduced from the trueſt Account of Matter of Fact I have been able to make in ſome Years of conſtant and diligent Obſervation upon the Place,

without relying on the leaſt borrowed Circumſtance more than for Conformation of my own Collections; I take Aſſurances, that the Experiments I ſhall further urge for ſatisfying the one, and the Reaſons I ſhall offer for Explication of the Whole, may produce an *Hypotheſis* for ſolving all the *Phænomena*, ſuch as upon leſs Experience than I have had, will hardly put me in danger of Controverſie.

Firſt then, as hath been already obſerved, the Continent of *Africa* is by the Law of invincible Neceſſity condemned to the extreameſt degree of Heat and Drowth, either of which alone of but little uſe, and only in conjunction capable of producing the Effect we are inquiring after: Hence therefore it happens, that in this Continent all Pools, Lakes, Fountains, *&c.* are by the end of *June* generally drie and exhauſted, their Store being exhaled and evaporated by the Sun's active Heat. We may inſtance in Rivers alſo, as that of *Alcazar*, one of the moſt Eminent upon the *Barbary* Coaſt, that in the Winter Seaſon runs ſo high as to hazard the drowning of the Town, becomes about the Summer Solſtice ſo very low, that the People ford it on foot: The Fields of *Tangier* that are eſteemed fruitful amongſt the *Moors*, even to a Proverb, that in the beginning of *May* bear a Crop of Herbage ſo very tall and rank, that Horſe and Men may be conceal'd by it, and affords one of the moſt verdant Beautiful Landskips in the World, become towards *July* ſo bare and ſcorch'd up, that from the ſame Proſpect may be drawn the moſt Elegant Picture of a Deſert, and Inhoſpitable Country. This Aſſertion of Matter of Fact may be avow'd, from the Cuſtoms and Practice of the Natives, who for

for the moſt part dwell in Tents and moving Towns, always incamping in a Poſture of Motion, purſuing ſtill this Fugitive Bleſſing, whoſe Abſence is their Deſtruction; nor are they always exempt from the Calamity they endeavour to eſchue by this neceſſary Method of Living; few Years paſſing, wherein much Cattel periſh not of Drouth; and once in ſeven Years at the moſt, the ſame Fate overtakes them, even to the loſs of their Servants and Slaves, who deſerting their Maſters and Country, fly for Relief to Chriſtian Gariſons upon the Coaſt, whereby many Governours have made their Fortunes by ſelling them into *Spain*; and this Profit of *Bien Venidos*, as they call them, is publickly known and allow'd. But it may be here queſtioned, how theſe Towns come to be ſupply'd, and like *Gideon*'s Fleece, watered, when all the Country round is famiſhing. To which I anſwer, That ſome Towns, as *Tangier*, are founded upon the Motive of a convenient Port and advantagious Scituation; which Proſpect encouraged the *Romans* to ſeek out Sourſes and Fountain Heads, though ſome Leagues diſtant off, from whence, by Canals they convey'd their Water; which Fountains and Aquæducts, when finiſh'd, were with much care and policy covered and conceal'd; and ſo ſucceſsful were their Endeavours therein, that neither the Revolution of ſo many Ages, the Induſtry of the Neceſſitous, nor Stratagems, and Scrutinies of their Enemies has been able to this Day to deprive them of this Benefit; and hence *Tangier* enjoys plenty of the beſt Water eſteem'd upon that Coaſt: Nor was this ſo great an inſtance of the Magnificence and Oſtentation of that ſplendid People, as of their Wiſdom, and Policy, the extraordinary utility of

the Port, and Scituation of the Place inviting their Choice, and in the Iſſue infinitely recompenced the Expence of ſo coſtly a Work.

And here, were it not a fitter Subject for a Treatiſe than a Digreſſion, I might ſay my Opinion touching this Noble Port of *Tangier*; which, in a word, is a Jewel fit only to adorn the Crown that wears it, whoſe Value I can better conceive than write, and humbly refer it to a more worthy Pen, or to a truer and more impartial Relator, Time for a few Years, in deſpite of all the Obloquy caſt upon it by the Enemies of His Majeſty's Honour and Dominion Abroad, will ſuffice to poliſh it to much perfection of Uſe and Publick Service both for Peace and War, as would be very hard for a Stranger to believe, and ſcarce fit for a modeſt Pen to write. Other Towns, in a Country of ſo general a Scarcity of Water, have taken their Beginnings; and the original Ground of their firſt Planting, hath been from ſome extraordinary Springs and Living Fountains: And this in ſhort, may ſuffice to reſolve theſe Kinds of Objections.

Thus having made it firſt eaſie to conceive, That this Continent ought in reſpect of its Scituation; and, Secondly, That it is avowedly in Matter of Fact of all the known Regions of the World, moſt defective and deſtitute of Water; let us now illuſtrate the General Hiſtory of Truth by a few oppoſite Experiments of my own, and then proceed to conſider, what in Sum may be deduced towards perfecting the *Hypotheſis* we are proſecuting.

I conſider, That as it was manifeſtly true, that the Conſumption of Moiſture is very ſudden and violent, as appears by ſo ſpeedy a ſcorching up of

of the Country, draining of Ponds, Lakes, Rivers, &c. ſo this violent Motion for ought I knew, might be augmented by Circumſtances and Accidents of Force only upon the Surface of the Earth, which not being by the way well examined, might poſſibly beget much Error in our Calculations of the like Effects, upon a Surface not influenced by, or ſubject to the like Accidents; I therefore conſidered, that the Earth on the Superficies whereof theſe marvellous Effects were wrought; was a Body ſolid, and more receptive and tenacious of Heat than the Sea; and being once well warmed by the Sun's piercing Beams, became like Fire under a Pot, and might equally conſpire with the Sun's immediate Influence, to the accelerating this Effect of Drouth, &c. we diſcourſe of; and whereof the Land-Breezes in the Night-Seaſon, are indeed a pregnant Teſtimony of Dews that fall upon the Sun's retiring, being by the Warmth yet retain'd upon the Surface of the Earth attenuated and converted into gentle Gales, whereof all Navigators in the Summer-time [eſpecially on the Coaſt of *Barbary*,] make great account.

But we had reaſon to doubt of this Effect in the like degree and permanence upon the Surface of a deep Sea, by whoſe continual Eluctuation the Superficies being under a perpetual Motion of Diverſity, the Sun-Beams became refracted; and the Heat conſequently not ſo intenſe as upon the Earth a fix'd Body and ſolid, the Surface whereof by many incident Concavities of Valleys, Reflections of Mountains, &c. hath as many Accidents that miniſter to the fixing and augmenting of this Heat, as there upon the Ocean to diſperce and diminiſh it. To make a true Calculation

three Leagues broad, and the *Mediterranian* to which it conveys theſe Supplies, being a Superficies in ſome places above 200 Leagues broad, and in length 800 Leagues; a Current running into the Streight therefore, whilſt theſe Effects are in their Exaltation, muſt needs by this time appear a very natural, eaſie, and neceſſary Truth; for ſuch is the Diſproportion betwixt this vaſt Surface, to be ſwell'd into an *Equilibrium* with the Ocean, and this narrow Streight or Gap through which the Supply is to be convey'd; that it is almoſt demonſtrable, were it not for the *Euxine* [the Receptacle of many great Rivers,] which over-runs, and diſembogues into the *Mediterranian* by the *Propontis*, together with the conſtant Tribute of many other Noble Rivers, which diſcharge themſelves directly into this Sea, and the vaſt Floods of Rain, that for two or three Months together are tranſported by ſtrong Southernly Winds out of that great Ocean; were it not, I ſay, for theſe Supplies, and that if we might have liberty to ſuppoſe no Communication with the Ocean, but this Sea a vaſt extended Lake bounded on all Quarters, and then making a Calculation from theſe Experiments by a Rule of mean Proportion, it will appear, that by Force and Prevalency of Exhalation, the *Mediterranian* would abate near a Foot in a Perpendicular Line in the Revolution of one Year.

And now, ſince upon eaſie Reaſoning, and by Experiments plain and practicable, we can thus almoſt tread on the Heels of a Demonſtration, and that we can avowedly infer and conclude upon the truth of an unſeen Cauſe, by an Effect ſo viſible and notorious as this of the Sun's Exhaling in ſo great a Proportion, by what ſubtle

Means

Means and invisible Agents, we perceive not; let us consider how far one may make a Judgment of, and infer an Effect unseen by a Cause familiar and notorious, and of what use it may be to us in the further prosecution of this Argument; and this leads me to offer my Opinion touching Spouts, whereof the *Mediterranean* in the Summer-Season so much abounds, and ought certainly to be reckoned amongst the prodigious *Phenomena* of Nature; and seeing as it were her last Effort, to prevent a *Vacuum*, which whosoever but sees, and will but maturely consider the frequency of the Object, will but little abate his Wonder. But Matter of Fact being true, and the Cause not out of sight, I submit further Disquisition to the Learned, whose Speculations may possibly lead them to the Anatomy of this Prodigy, and to examine by what Instruments and extraordinary Agents Nature proceeds in this singular and marvellous Method of raising Water in so vast a quantity, to so great a Heighth, and in so few Moments. For certainly, this differs from the ordinary way of Exhalation, as our several Engines for raising of Water differ amongst themselves, since therefore it is so, whereof Millions of Eyes both by Sea and Land, are daily Testimonies: I am content with *David*, who [though an Inspired Philosopher,] thought fit to signalize this amongst the Subjects of his Wonder, and quiet my self with only taking notice, that it must needs be a Production of the same Cause, but in a more intense Degree by which other more rarify'd Exhalations are effected, and may be thought a new and strange Link of that Chain of Causes which conspire in the Production of the *Phænomenon* we are still pursuing. For the *Atmosphere*

meſphere becoming inflam'd upon the Sun's approach towards our Tropick, and the great Continent of *Africa* being, as is obſerv'd, deſtin'd by an inevitable Law of Nature to the extreameſt degree of Drouth and Scarcity of Water; and there being no Lake or Sea capable of miniſtring Relief but the *Mediterranian*, from the Reaſon already urged: And this Sea being of too limited a Surface to yield competent Supply to ſo vaſt a Region labouring univerſally under this Calamity, Nature ſeems diſtreſs'd and reduced to her laſt Shifts, and when her common Methods fail, ſummons [as it were] her Arrier band to prevent, for ought we know, ſome ſort of Diſſolution; for I am perſuaded, were it not for this Midland-Sea, out of whoſe Boſom ſuch vaſt Quantities is exhaled for this purpoſe, the greateſt part of *Africa* would be Burnt, or at leaſt a Deſert. From hence therefore may be inferr'd the Wiſdom of the Creator, as well as his Infinite Bounty and Goodneſs, who has ſo appointed the Structure of the World, that only ſo ſmall a part of it labours under this Affliction. For, without all doubt, had the four Quarters of the Earth and Iſlands been continued into one Univerſal Continent, [as ſome ancient Untravelled Philoſophers have dream'd,] and the Sea confin'd to the Verge or extream Sides thereof, without any ſuch Communication with the Liquid Element, as is provided by the *Mediterranian*, the *Baltick*, and *Red Sea*, *Euxine*, *Caſpian*, and the variety of mighty Lakes to be found in all great Continents, it would not be Difficult to make out by this *Hypotheſis*, that in ſuch caſe ſcare half the World would have been Habitable.

But

But not to prolong Digreſſions, the *Mediterranian* [as I was obſerving,] being too ſtrait to afford Moiſture in any proportion, for the Supply of ſo general a Drouth by the ordinary way of Exhalation; Nature ſeems compell'd to ſet theſe ſtupendious Engines at work, not unlike to diſtreſs'd Mariners, who, when they have ſprung a Leak too big for their Relief by their ordinary Methods, have recourſe at length to all ſorts of extraordinary Inſtruments, and Veſſels to free themſelves from the dangers that threaten Shipwreck and Deſtruction; and there being now no room for Doubt, but that Nature, who like a pious Mother, is anxious and induſtrious to diſtribute her Favours equally, works not theſe Wonders but for ſome adequate End. This Branch of our Diſcourſe may therefore help to further explicate both the neceſſity and expence of Moiſture in theſe Regions, and with yet greater Evidence upon conſidering a little the Hiſtory of Spouts, which I have collected partly by my own Obſervation, but more eſpecially, by informing my ſelf from the Reports of the Ableſt Navigators I could find in the ſeveral Countries where I have convers'd; and I cannot yet learn that either in the *Indian*, or *American* Ocean, nor in the *South Sea* under the Æquator, or elſewhere, hath been ſeen at any time above four Spouts at once, whereas in the *Mediterranian*, ſome Leagues Eaſterly of *Sicilia*, hath been ſeen thirty four at a time; I remember my ſelf to have ſeen ten or eleven, and that too when the Seaſon was declining, the Sun being near the Æquinoctial. And ſince Effects give us the moſt infallible Account of their Cauſes, and are the beſt Aids towards making a Judgment thereupon, we may from

from hence ſafely infer Three uſeful Concluſions:

1. That in that Seaſon, the Sun's Heat rages here more fiercely than in any part of the World beſides.

2. And conſequently, the Neighbouring Continent muſt lye under a deeper ſenſe of this Inclemency than any other Region.

3. If we may take the liberty to make uſe of this Diſproportion between four, and thirty four, it will appear, that there is above eight times more Moiſture exhal'd and convey'd out of the *Mediterranian* than from any proportionate Space of the Univerſal Ocean beſide; nor will it be amiſs to be yet a little more Mathematical and Demonſtrative, as far as the reaſon of the Conjecture will bear, by calculating the Space wherein theſe thirty four Spouts were viſible at once, which we may allow to be a Periphery or Circumference of about ſeven Leagues Diameter: For ſuch as Proſpect a Man may have upon a Ship's Deck, and then by caſting up of the Area, or ſuperficial Quantity of this Space, and comparing it with the whole Area of the *Mediterranian*, calculated from the beſt Rules our Mapps afford us; and granting that all ſuch Times as theſe thirty four Spouts were ſeen, Nature was as buſily employ'd throughout all Quarters of the *Mediterranian*, which is not hard to allow; then by this Operation it will appear, that within the Limits of the *Mediterranian*, ſhe had at the leaſt 60000 of theſe mighty Engines at work at one and the ſame time; and here the contemplative Man might poſſibly improve this Hint, and ſpin out a longer and more delicate Thread from this Bottom, and yet even at length we muſt confeſs, the

the ſubtilty of Nature's working will ever defeat, in ſome degree, the moſt accurate and ſtudy'd reſearches of Human Wit.

To conclude then, if Nature [as is obſerved] does not the leaſt thing in vain, there can be no reaſon to think ſhe is in ſport when ſhe produces Wonders, and as our not being able to aſcribe a certain Limited Diſtance to the Heavenly Bodies, cannot be thought to leſſen our Belief of their wonderful Diſtance from us; ſo though we cannot reduce to Experiment, or propoſe any Rule whereby to make a Judgment of the proportion of Moiſture thus convey'd as we did in the common way of Exhalation, yet from the Premiſſes we may ſafely and ingeniouſly conclude, that the quantity is exceeding great, which I doubt not will be eſteem'd another ſtrong Voucher for the Rationale of our *Hypotheſis*.

And now, leſt I ſhould ſwell to a Treatiſe, what is intended an humble Eſſay, I truſt I may reſt aſſured to have at leaſt ſaid enough to explicate a neceſſity of a Current running into the *Mediterranian*, as well from the Order of Nature and Structure of the World, as from viſible Univerſal Cauſes and Experiments, almoſt as concluding as a Demonſtration; ſo that if it may be granted we attain'd this moſt difficult Point of our *Phænomenon*, we ſhall be able from hence as from higher ground to ſurvey the reſt with eaſe, as being for the moſt part, but the ſeveral Aſſents and progreſſional Methods by which Nature proceeds to this. What hath been ſaid, may therefore ſuffice for the Explication of our firſt Problem, how there ought to be a Current.

For

For the Second, we ſhall in a few words be able to explain how it happens, that though the Current runs into the Streight for the moſt part, yet it doth not hold ſo throughout the Year, where let us a little trace the Sun, the Parent and principal Author of the divers *Phænomena* we are ſtudying.

1. As to his Motion of Declination between the Tropicks, our Aſtronomical Tables afford us Light ſufficient.

2. As touching his Influences on the Seaſons and Weather throughout the World, conſtant Experience makes the beſt mention of that Truth: Having therefore kept with much care and exactneſs, an *Ephemeris* of the Weather, as alſo of the Current for near four Years together during my Abode at *Tangier*, I became both enabled and encouraged to write not only the Hiſtory of Matter of Fact in both, but upon mature Debate to make ſome Offer at the Reaſon and Cauſes; for, after having compar'd my Yearly Obſervations, and finding both the Current and the Weather agreeing in their reſpective Periods, and their Changes and Reſolutions held exact Conſent and Analogy with the Sun's Motions, I took hence my firſt Hint for propoſing the *Hypotheſis* by which *Phænomena* may be reſolv'd.

Having therefore already diſcours'd the true and naked Hiſtory of the Current, and treated as conciſely as may be upon the firſt Problem, and proved the neceſſity of ſuch an Appearance, let us, I ſay, proceed to the Second, [*viz.*] Why this Current doth not hold its Courſe the whole Year about. It is already explain'd, that the Current is and ought to be moſt in force about the Sum-

Summer's Solſtice ; of conſequence therefore, the Cauſe productive thereof is at the ſame time neareſt its Aſcendant, if the Sun then, whoſe Influence is about that Seaſon moſt predominant, be the Eſſential Promoter of the various Cauſes that conſpire to this marvellous Production, [which I preſume is now paſt Doubt,] we need not grope for a Reaſon, but proceed to take notice that as he declines, and by degrees takes his leave of our Northern *Hemiſphere*, whereof the whole *Phænomena* of Nature makes but one Univerſal Inſtance, both Man, and Beaſt, Animals and Vegetables; the humbleſt Shrub to the proudeſt Cedar, bearing about them, as it were, an Inſcription of his daily Motions; his various Aſpects being ſtill the Sourſes of as various Productions, it cannot admit of Diſpute, that in our Caſe wherein his Influence challengeth ſo much Dominion, there can be urged the leaſt Exception. The Sun's Heat therefore growing by his Diſtance more remiſs, his Influence and Exhaling Virtue decline and grow Languid; and after he hath paſs'd the Æquinoctial, and whilſt he withdraws apace from the Northern World, and all things on this ſide begin to mourn his Abſence, he viſits other Regions, and the Southern *Hemiſphere* begins to warm, and an Univerſal Spring proclaims his Preſence and Dominion; and as he ſtill moves towards that Tropick, and ſtill conſequently retrenches his Favours to us on this ſide the Æquator, his Exhaling Virtue becomes at length ſuſpended; and as during his Receſs, the *Atlantick* Ocean is haſtning to repleniſh the *Mediterranian* by the Streight of *Gibraltar*, and to reduce it to an *Æquilibrium*: So the Sun towards the Winter Solſtice, coming to ſurvey the two great

great Seas of *India* and *Æthiopia*, and all that vaſt Southern Ocean between them, transfers his Exhaling Power thither, where having ſo ſpacious a Medium wherein to diſplay his Beams, the huge Floods of Rain drawn from this mighty Deep, grow as much into Exceſs as what the narrow Surface of the *Mediterranian* could yield, was ſhort of ſupplying the Neceſſities of the parch'd and thirſty Continent that bounds it; in Teſtimony whereof it is remarkable, that not only *Barbary*, but *Caſtile* it ſelf in the Heart of the *Spaniſh* Continent, [where alſo I had ſome Years of Reſidence,] is ever watered from the South, ſcarce a drop of Rain falling that is not accompanied by a Southerly Wind, eſpecially upon the Continent of *Barbary*, where the Rains are conſtantly driven by Storms of Wind at South, and S. S. W. and we that are concerned in the Affairs of the Mole, make the beſt Prognoſticks of the approach of Great Seas, and take the Alarm of foul Weather from the coming in of the Rains, and it is ſeldom ſeen they ſurvive each other; they come in about the Winter Solſtice, and hold almoſt a continued violent Rain for a Month, ſix Weeks, and two Months together; ſo that what with the Relaxation of the Sun's Heat, by which all kind of Exhalation in our *Hemiſphere* is in a manner extinguiſh'd, the vaſt Torrents that haſten from the glutted Continent, as well by Rivers as by a thouſand mighty Cataracts to be ſeen all along the Coaſt of *Barbary*, together with the huge Proportion of theſe Rains that fall directly into the *Mediterranian*, and the conſtant Supply from the Ocean aforeſaid by the Streight of *Gibraltar*, the *Euxine*, *&c.* the Current, I ſay, by this Revolution and Succeſſion

of

of different Cauſes gradually declines, and at length expires; for that from hence the *Mediterranian* becomes repleniſhed, and is reſtored to an *Æquilibrium* with the Ocean, which plainly explicates the ſecond Problem; for during this Intermiſſion of the Current, there being no Declivity but what is begotten from the general Flux and Reflux of the Ocean, the Streight or Narrow muſt conſequently be influenced by that, and therefore the Obſervation of Tydes in the Narrow about this Seaſon of the Year, [which upon this Suſpenſion muſt needs enſue,] is evidently made out which was to be cleared.

The Third Propoſition is, how we may prove and reſolve by Reaſon, how at ſome Seaſons there comes to be a Current running directly out: I have already obſerved it is ſo, and vouched the Matter of Fact by the Authority of Sir *John Harman*; which ſingle Teſtimony may ſuffice, in regard many more may be urged, to fortifie therefore in two words the truth of this improbable Story, [for it will find ſome Unbelievers;] let us examine by our uſual Method, and ſee what Reaſon in this Caſe offers in our favour. We have arrived to the Explication of our reſpective Problems hitherto, by the moſt gradual and methodical Steps my Underſtanding can yet ſuggeſt, and have, I truſt, attain'd tolerable Evidence for the neceſſity of the ſeveral Appearances, and it will not, I hope, be difficult to inlarge; yet our Proſpect, by conſidering the ſame Cauſe in a greater Extenſion, and propagated to a yet further Degree, which reduced the *Mediterranian* to this State of an *Æquilibrium* with the Ocean, by which Calculation the Queſtion will prove ſo eaſie, that it will be hard to avoid ſtumbling upon the Solu-

lution; the ſame conflux of Cauſes that brought us to this vertical Point, naturally planting us upon the brink of a new Declivity, and as when a Star culminates, the firſt moment of his Departure from the Meridian, is the firſt ſtep to his declining; ſo the next Accident to this *Æquilibrium*, [ſuppoſing the Cauſes ſtill in force, which but ſeldom fails,] begets a Superfluity in the *Mediterranian*, which produces a Declivity out of the *Streights*, and conſequently a Current from the Eaſtwards, which needs not further Explication. But this being a Production ſo ſhort-lived is ſcarce obſerved, and ſo not very eaſily credited; for theſe Effects of Winter, [although violent,] yet are here ſoon over, and the Sun reviſits us apace, and begets new and ſudden Appearances, and the moſt laſting are the moſt obſerved; and therefore this Remark of Matter of Fact is made but by a few, and the Cauſe too for the moſt part miſinterpreted.

We are come now to our Fourth and Laſt principal Obſervation, [*viz.*] The ſtrange Repugnance we find between the Current running into the *Mediterranian*, and the *Levant* Winds which blow directly out, their Motions being ever ſo contracting, that by how much the *Levant* increaſes, by ſo much the Current quickens; and if the one riſes to a Storm, the other ſwells to a Torrent. But before I give my Opinion touching this hard Queſtion, it may not be amiſs to conſider a little, Firſt, What the *Levants* are. They are called *Levants* both from their Courſe, as blowing from the Eaſt where the Sun riſes, and alſo from their freſhning and riſing higher as the Sun riſes; for they are generally at their Height when the Sun comes to the Meridian, and duller

ler as the Sun declines; and unleſs it prove a Storm, and Over-blow, the Night's for the moſt part Calm, and the Wind off the Shore all the Summer long; and as theſe Winds are of all others the moſt legitimate Production of the Sun's Heat and Vicinity, ſo they reign moſt in Summer, and are ſtrongeſt about that Solſtice. It is alſo further remarkable, that at *Tangier*, where I had my Reſidence, all Winds to the Eaſtward of the Meridian convert into *Levants*; but on the Weſt-ſide it blows where it liſteth; we have alſo *Levants* which are called through *Levants*, and theſe generally are the ſtrongeſt and moſt laſting; for that they hold their Courſe quite through the *Mediterranian*. Another ſort there is, which the *Spaniards* call *Levante contra Hicho*, which ſeldom blows from above eight or ten Leagues within the Narrow, and are out of Breath before you can double Cape *Spartell*; but the fiercer *Levant*'s dull apace after you are once out of the *Streight*, and many times fail you in the Offering; albeit, it blow a Storm in the Narrow, which is a pregnant Vindication they are propagated by a Cauſe from within, but the manner how, remains to be diſcuſs'd, which, after this ſhort neceſſary Hiſtory we may proceed to diſcourſe. And Firſt, It is an Eſſential Point to conſider the Structure and Poſition of the Coaſt of the *Medeterranian* Sea, eſpecially on the *African* ſide, as alſo on the Coaſt of *Spain* at leaſt, as high up as Cape *St. Paul*, which we find to be generally exceeding high Land and Mountainous, and precipitous on the *African* ſide, that it is but in few places acceſſable; from whence proceeds the Scarcity of Ports upon that Coaſt, and in the Narrow, the vaſt high Land of *Apes-Hill*, and *Gibraltar* is notorious enough.

As to their Position, they lye almoſt upon two direct Parallels, [*viz.*] Upon a due East and West Line, as alſo is the Inlet, or Narrow, as in Valleys therefore continued between a long Tract of Mountains, the Wind blows always Trade, either directly one way or another tracing the Rumb, or Courſe of the Vale, let the *Atmoſphere* above be agitated, or driven never ſo variouſly. So theſe two fluid Elements by the trenching of the Coaſt below, and the lofty and mountany Boundaries above, are conducted neceſſarily through this Vale or Channel, let the firſt *Impetus* be from what Quarter ſoever, which [as was obſerved,] reſolves all Winds on the East-ſide of the Meridian into *Levants*. If it be granted then, that all Agitations of the *Air* or *Atmoſphere* within the *Streight*, muſt purſue the Courſe or Rumb, its Boundaries thoſe two mountainous Coaſts ſeem to preſcribe it, let us inquire what Aſſiſtance may be thence had, in order to the framing an *Hypotheſis* for Solution of this our laſt *Phænomenon*.

To avoid Repetition therefore, we may firſt reſort to what hith been already treated on touching the Sun's Prevalence upon the Surface of this Midland Sea, which proving to be the undoubted Cauſe of all Moiſture, is as avowedly the Parent of theſe Emotions we are enquiring after above the watry Surface; for according to my humble ſenſe of the Nature of Exhalations, the Moiſture exhal'd, and the Breezes and Winds that accompany this Effect of the Sun's Heat, are Twins of the ſame Parents, and albeit, not always perceptible to human Sight, from the Reaſons already offered touching the dead Calms in the *Mediterranian*; yet ſince there can be no

Exha-

Exhalation without Motion, the inſenſibilty there-of, when it ſo happens, ought no more to influence our Opinion on the Negative, than one ought to argue againſt the motion of the heavenly Bodies, becauſe our Eyes cannot trace their Progreſs. If theſe two Effects then prove ſo near akin, we need not but recur to the Reaſons already urged for Explication of the neceſſity of ſo vaſt a quantity of Moiſture exported from this Sea; for the Cœleſtial Warmth hath no ſooner attenuated the watry Surface into Vapour, but this Vapour gradually rarifying, and back'd ſtill with new Supplies, exacts proportionable degrees of Space for its Expanſion; and where there is not a fair unbounded Horiſon, that may yield free and ample Scope for this Progreſſion, by how much the Motion is obſtructed in one Part, [by whatſoever accidental Impediment,] by ſo much is the Force and *Impetus* augmented, where it finds liberty of Paſſage in another; and as in the *Eolipile*, the ſame Vapour that by virtue of the Neigbouring Heat, would, if at liberty, but juſtly calmly breath away in a ſilent Stream, makes, when confin'd, that violent and forcible Protuſion we obſerve in that uſeful Experiment; ſo in this Sea, on whoſe Surface the Sun's Beams are ſo predominent, like one Immenſe *Eolipile*, whoſe mountainous Coaſts blocking up, as it were, and confining this Conflux and Motion of new Matter, the dilated medium reverberates from the Sides; and as in the Speaking Inſtrument, [if one might offer at other Reaſons than what the ingenuous Inventor hath publiſhed for ſo violent an Exploſion of the Air,] the percuſſion of the Air which naturally would form it ſelf into an Orbicular or Eliptical, being by the oppugning Sides of the

Inſtrument caſt at length into a Cylindrical Figure, and ſo moves and tranſmits Articulation by a Cylinder of *Medium* in a direct Line adequate to the Orbicular or Elyptical Form, it would otherwiſe have partaken [or as a Globe of twelve Inches Diameter fill'd with Water, will fill a Cylinder of one Inch Diameter, or near an hundred and fifty Foot in length, when the *Radii* of that Globe is otherwiſe but ſix Inches in length, that is, the remoteſt Confines of the Liquor ſo formed, is but ſix Inches removed from the Center;] in like manner, I ſay, the *Atmoſphere* in this continual Progreſs of Expanſion incountring with theſe lofty Barricadoes, by the way becomes ſtreightned, and [no Figure being ſo capacious as the round,] is more crowded and compreſt in any other Form whatſoever: But the Figure into which it becomes caſt by, theſe reſiſting Boundaries being Cylindrical, at leaſt Oblong, is ſo diverſe and repugnant to this natural Propenſion to a Circular Motion, that the Conteſt becomes by this Means more violent, and the *Atmoſphere* diſtorted, and, as it were, enraged by this Confinement, fiercely and naturally purſues its Paſſage where it meets with leaſt Oppoſition. This Streight therefore, or Gap, opening upon a direct Line with this Current of the *Atmoſphere*, and whoſe Bottom is a Surface horizontally continious with the Source of theſe Agitations, [*viz.*] The Sea within the Streight, this ſmooth, direct, and eaſie Path, does on the one hand invite its Paſſage, whilſt on the other it is impuls'd by the aforeſaid Cauſes; and hence by occaſion alſo of the exceeding high Land on each ſide the Narrow, is begotten that frequent tempeſtuous and rapid Motion of the *Levant* during the Summer Seaſon, which remain'd to be cleared.

But

But a contemplative Objector might poſſibly criticiſe upon this laſt Obſervation, and urge, that though it be true that the Coaſt is fortified and barr'd by this high Land on each ſide, yet the fleet Motion of the winged Vapour would ſoon ſurmount that Obſtruction, and by an eaſie and ſpeedy Flight aſcend the proudeſt Tops of theſe Precipices. To which I anſwer, That in caſe the major part did not break Priſon that way, and the incumbent and more attenuated Particles were not puſh'd, and hove upwards by the perpetual Increment, and propulſion of freſh Vapour from the Sea, the Streight of *Gibraltar* infinitely too narrow to diſcharge ſo prodigious a Conflux, would upon the leaſt agitation of the *Atmoſphere* within the *Mediterranian*, breath nothing but Tempeſt and Horrour, and during the *Levant*, or Summer Seaſon, would be a continual Storm, and conſequently utterly Unnavigable. But to render this my Conceſſion practicable, and therefore more credible, I cauſed a Veſſel to be prepared as in the Figure, which being Oblong, the Fome was more adjuſted to my purpoſe; and filling it half full of Water, [*viz.*] up to the Height of the Gap left at the end, which repreſenting the Narrow, as the two Sides prolonged did the Coaſt of the *Mediterranian*; I apply'd it ſo nigh a good Fire, as that contain'd Water might ſoon grow warm, and as it did, and the Steam began to riſe, though it breathed calmly away over the top of the Sides, yet the Gap ſtanding in a lower Poſition, and nearer the Surface, the Source of the aſcending Vapour breathed ſo ſtrong a Steam, that it would blow out the largeſt Candle I could apply to it; the dilating *Medium*

to every degree of its Aſcent and Rarifaction, requiring larger ſpace than the Veſſel could afford for its Expanſion; and ſo the higher the Sides are continued above the Surface of the contain'd Water proportionably, is abridg'd the liberty of attenuating Particles, and is augmented their Activity through the Paſſage aforeſaid: Howbeit, this I muſt ſay, that I have frequently remark'd upon an eaſie *Levant* Breeze, that the Clouds upon *Apes-Hill*, and the adjoining Mountains, have reſted with little or no Motion; whence may be inferr'd, that whilſt the Narrow could give convenient Paſſage, thoſe Mountains preſcrib'd entire Bounds to the *Levant*'s Motion, nor can it in nature be otherwiſe, no more than a Man in his wits would break Priſon by ſcaling the Walls, when he might ſafely make his Eſcape by the Door. Thus having laid down a conciſe and true Hiſtory of the *Levants*, and reaſon'd as far, and as evidently as I am able, touching their Production, Predominance, Progreſs, *&c.* It only remains, that I ſhould clear this our laſt Difficulty, and Paradox in Nature; whoſe Catholick Law ſeems violated by this conteſting Motion of the Current, the Liquid Element, according to Univerſal Experience as well as Reaſon, being ever paſſively hurried, and like the Clouds above, agitated and tranſported, as the Motion of the uncertain Winds ſhall diſpoſe them. Let us therefore inquire, how this Counter Motion is begotten, and that as the *Levants* grow higher, the Current which oppoſes it alſo increaſes.

I have endeavoured to explain almoſt to the verity of a Demonſtration, that the *Levants* are of all other Winds the moſt Legitimate Off-ſpring of the Sun's predominant Warmth upon the Surface

face of the *Mediterranian* Sea, they are therefore conſequently the faithfulleſt Reporters, and as it were the true Ephemeris and Calculation of the Degree intenſe, or remiſs of the Power and Cauſe which conſtitutes and begets them; and we may as ſafely make a Judgment of the Sun's Influence within this Sea, in reſpect of Energy or Relaxation thereof, by the forcible or languid Motion of the *Levants*, as one may judge of a Fever by the Pulſe, or infer Froſt or Thaw by their viſible different Productions; albeit, our remaining Senſes ſhould continue without Conviction. Having therefore cleared the neceſſity of a Current running into the *Mediterranian*, and eſtabliſhed the Reaſons upon the very ſame Cauſe whereby the *Levant* Winds receive their Motions, and and are ſo pregnant an Indication, we ſtand in need but of little Explication of the reaſonableneſs of the Current thus ſwelling and oppoſing it ſelf againſt the *Levants*; for if we perſiſt in our Reaſoning from the ſafe Principles, we have hitherto endeavoured to preſerve inviolated, it would appear a more poſing Difficulty ſhould it have happened otherwiſe, and indeed were a Contradiction, and would ſpring a Leak even in our main *Hypotheſis*; for the Angle of Declivity by which the Current receives its Motion, increaſing in proportion to the Cauſe, by which this *Impetus* is generated, moſt naturally and evidently explains the neceſſity of the Currents accelerating in a proportionable Counter Motion, which was to be reſolv'd. But we may yet ſuperadd a Remark of concluſive Evidence, wherein our Senſes are of great uſe to our Speculation touching this laſt Problem, and that is, that the *Levants* are ſo very moiſt that nothing can be ſecured

from

from Ruſt and Tarniſh when they blow, even our Watches will ſtand ſtill in our Pockets, and Swords ruſt in the Scabbard; and ſo impregnated are theſe Winds with Moiſture, that near the Surface of the Water they wet to the Skin, [as not by the Breach or Spiey of the Sea,] which my ſelf, and hundreds more, have often experimented, when the Affairs of the Mole have detain'd us long upon Duty. I cannot at preſent think upon any Example of Propriety enough for an Alluſion towards a further Explanation of this Problem. I truſt therefore, I need not labour after further Perſpicuity; for Truth lyes in a little room; and I have ſtudied to ſuſtain the whole Diſcourſe upon Reaſon deduced from the beſt account of Matter of Fact, wherewith my Obſervations for ſome Years could furniſh me, from whence I have made the ſhorteſt Digreſſions that may be; yet 'tis an untrodden Path I have travelled, which may be ſome Apology for Errour whereſoever it ſhall appear: Howbeit, I could better endure the Rebukes of the Severe for ſo bold an Adventure, than the Reproaches of my Friends, for not ſaying ſomething on a Subject perfectly new, and wherein my Experience might be thought to have qualified me in ſome ſort to render a Reaſon, and whereby the Publick might receive Benefit from the Hint, ſuch an Eſſay might afford to ſome worthy Perſon to finiſh in perfection a Piece, whereof I have but traced the Out-Lines, to whoſe Candour and Learned Cenſure, in all humble Ingenuity, I moſt readily ſubmit.

DIVERS

DIVERS Remarkable ORDERS OF THE LADIES at *Spring-Garden* IN PARLIAMENT Aſſembled:

TOGETHER

With certain VOTES of the Unlawful Aſſembly at *KATE*'s in *Covent-Garden.*

Both ſent Abroad to prevent Miſinformation.

Veſpere Diei veneris Martii 26, 1647.

ORdered by the Ladies Aſſembled in Parliament, That their Orders and Votes be forthwith Printed, and Publiſhed, to prevent all ſuch Miſreports, and Scandals, as either Malice, or want of Wit, heightned with Snuff of Ale, or ſtain'd Clarret may raiſe, to the Diſhonour of their ſaid Votes and Proceedings.

B. Kingſmill, Cler. Parliamentorum.

THE

THE Rattle headed Ladies being Aſſembled at *Kate*'s in *Covent-Garden*, and having ſpent ſome time in chooſing their Speaker, [it having been objected againſt the Lady Dutcheſs, that ſhe had uſed beating up of Quarters, and other Youthful Sports, too frequently with Prince *Rupert*,] they at laſt reſolved upon the Lady *Iſabella T—ne*, hoping thereby their Acts might have great Influence on the King's Majeſty. Firſt therefore, they took into conſideration their own Buſineſs, and voted, That no Round-head ſhould dare to come into any of their Quarters; and on the contrary, none of their Members, [*viz.*] Cavaleers, do cohabit in any of the Round-head's Quarters, or pay any Contribution to them by way of Benevolence, Loan, or otherwiſe.

That Thanks be given to the Lady *M—tague*, *T—ham*, *C—ven*, *&c.* for their Courtiſies and Favours to the diſtreſſed Cavalleers beyond the Seas. Ordered thereupon, That their ſaid Ladyſhips, together with the Lady *S—nhop*, have leave to ſell, give away, or otherwiſe diſpoſe of their *French* Commodities, without paying Exciſe or Cuſtom.

That Mrs. *Phillips* be forthwith ſent into *France* from the Houſe, to the Lord *M—tague*, to let him know his Lady hath negotiated with the Members of both Houſes.

It was thought fit by the whole Houſe, That a Trop of tryed Able Men ſhould be raiſed, that ſo they might be the more ſecure againſt all their Adverſaries; but it was long in Debate, who ſhould be Commander in chief of it: For my Lady *N—port* the Counteſs, moved for my Lord *D—by*, who ſhe confeſs'd was not the Ableſt Man

ſhe

ſhe had convers'd with by many, yet in polling they ought not to deſpiſe him, conſidering how the King favours him; and that if need be, [though he have the Title,] yet they may conſtitute another under him to go through with their Buſineſs. But there was another Lady which much oppoſed her, and was very deſirous that my Lord G—*ring*'s Experience might be conſidered, which perhaps the Houſe had done, had not Mrs. *Kirke* urged his Debauchery, and put them in mind of Prince *Maurice* his Deſerts and Abilities, though he did not ſeem a Courtier. But then the Dutcheſs of R—*mond* aſſured them, That none was to be compared to Prince *Rupert*, againſt whom nothing could be urged, but that his ill Fortune, that his Labour wanted the deſigned and expected Fruit; but being cleared of that Imputation by Mrs. *Legge*, [who aſſured her, that that did altogether depend on his Companions in Arms, and not on him,] it was ordered, that my Lady *Aubigny* ſhould be ſent into *France* to deſire him to receive the Command. That Mrs. *Camblin* for the Proteſtants, and Mrs. *Wibarne* for the Papiſts, be appointed Meſſengers to attend the Houſe, and that they have the Title given them of Meſſengers of the Chamber.

The ſaid Ladies in Parliament aſſembled, did declare, That by their firſt Vote of this Day, they did not in any wiſe intend to exclude from their Quarters, the Party of the Houſe of Peers which voted the Bill of Maintainance of the Army out of their Houſe, in that their ſaid Ladyſhips are underſtood to be well affected, not Round-heads. Whilſt theſe things were in agitation, in comes a Serjeant from the Houſe of Ladies at Mrs. *Chipps* Aſſembled, in the Name of which

which he pronounced this an unlawful Aſſembly, a Junčto, a Mungril Parliament, commanding them to confine their Votes and Themſelves to their own Houſes, there to continue during pleaſure, *Hide-Park*, St. *James's Park*, *Spring Garden*, and *Kate's* notwithſtanding.

This puts their Ladyſhips into great Diſorder, and more Confuſion, than if they had been taken with their Gallants by all, and each of their reſpective Husbands, which is the cauſe we have no more of this Parliament.

The Ladies well-affected, being [as you have heard] Aſſembled at their Houſe in *Spring Garden*, ſpent ſometime in chooſing their Speaker, and the major part pitching upon the Lady *H—land*, ſhe deſired to excuſe her ſelf, alledging her Husband's Diſcretion, and further intreated, that all her Right might be conferred on my Lady *C—liſle*: But the ſaid Lady not being fit to be truſted, being too open, the Lady *L—ſter* was named; but it was objected by the Lady *Hippeſley*, that the ſaid Counteſs was a Delinquent, and had formerly carried Supplies to the King, pretending likewiſe that her Husband, [*viz.*] Sir *John Hippeſley* was much damniſied in his Eſtate and Office by the ſaid Supplies. But the Lady *S—sbury* coming in, the Diſpute was ſoon ended, and the Chair conferred upon her [*nemine contradicente*,] who immediately named Mrs. *Peel* Meſſenger, to attend the Houſe; and the Lady *N—ton* and the Lady *S—leton* to be Door-keepers, with order to keep all out but Members. All this was aſſented unto, notwithſtanding ſome Exceptions were taken to the ſlowneſs of Mrs. *Peele's* Pate; it being aggravated by one, that ſhe went ſlower than the Maſters of *Chancery* when they go on Meſſages.

Then

Then their Ladyſhips taking into conſideration the difficult Caſes which might fall out in the buſineſs of their Houſes. Ordered, That Mr. Doctor *Wetherborne* be ſent for from *Holdenby*, and Doctor *Daviſon* from *Paris*, to be Aſſiſtants to the Houſe. Ordered farther, That Dr. *H—ton* and Dr. *C—berlain* be alſo Aſſiſtants to the Houſe, that ſo with greater Eaſe and Security their Ladyſhips map be help'd out with their moſt troubleſom and preſſing Affairs.

The Houſe then adjourned to the Day following; and being met accordingly, the firſt buſineſs was to ſend the aforeſaid Meſſage to the unlawful Aſſembly at *Kate*'s: Next falling upon their Votes, in particular, that part of the Order to be an abſolute Breach of their Privilege, which forbids the Cavalleer's Entrance into the Roundhead's Quarters; and accordingly ordered, That the ſaid Cavalleers ſhall within two Days depart this City, and not come within 20 Miles of the Lines of Communication; and further voted, That no malignant Lady preſume to walk in the *Spring-Garden* after Twelve of the Clock at Night, upon any pretence whatſoever.

Next, their Ladyſhips took into conſideration the great Number of Delinquents, and ordered that there be a Committee for Compoſitions, to meet at the Lady *K—nts* for the Proteſtants, and for the Papiſts at the Lady *Lakes*.

This day a Complaint was brought againſt Sir *Henry Blunt* for publiſhing an heretical and dangerous Doctrine, [*viz.*] *That it is better to converſe with, and reſort to Common Women, than Ladies of Honour:* Upon mature deliberation whereof, the Ladies with much indignation ſent for him; who being come, and hearing his Accuſation

tion read, was commanded to withdraw. During the Debate, up ſtarts the Lady *Foſter*, and offers to the Conſideration of the Houſe, the dangerous Effects that this Opinion might produce, if it were ſuffered to be ſowed amongſt the People, to the utter decay of Trade, as alſo of the particular Commerce of Rheniſh Wine in the Muſt, Tarts, Cheeſe-cakes, Sullibubs, *&c.* whereby the profit of the Houſe will greatly be diminiſhed. This Speech was receiv'd by a marvellous Applauſe of the whole Houſe, and the ſaid Sir *Henry Blunt* was called in the ſecond time, who commanded to kneel, refuſed, alledging, The Houſe was no lawful Judicature, but appeal'd to the Commons of *England* and *Wales*, which ſuſpended all Proceedings therein for that time.

The Houſe conſidered in the next place, That divers weak Perſons have crept into Places beyond their Abilities; and to the End that Men of greater Parts may be put into their rooms, appointed the Lady *Middleſex*, Mrs. *Dunch*, the Lady *Foſter*, and the Lady *Ann Waller*, by reaſon of their great Experience in the Soldiery of this Kingdom, to be a Committee for Tryers in this Kingdom.

The Houſe being ready to adjourn, there was News of a Quarrel between two notorious Members of the ſaid Houſe, Mrs. *Harris* and Mrs. *Dunch*, and good Counſel was given them to unite againſt their Common Enemy, their Husbands; and it was at length ordered, That they ſhould be reconciled, and *Tom Temple* ſhould be deſired to put up his Blade.

The Morning following, they took into conſideration the many Gariſons of the Kingdom that were to be kept, and which not. Ordered, That *Nor-*

Northampton be continued in Garison, and that the Lady *S—land* be requested to take the Command thereof upon her, notwithstanding the Self-denying Ordinance.

That an *English* Garison be put into *Carlisle*, to prevent Foreign Nations getting in possession thereof, as is to be feared, by reason of some secret Intelligence had by the *French* Ambassador in that place.

That *Leicester*, *Newport*, *Marleborough*, and all which, are either old or useless Fortifications, be forthwith slighted.

After this, they took into consideration the Standing Forces of this Kingdom, and their several Entertainments, and ordered the Lord F—*ces*, Mr. *S—by*, Mr. *R—ad*, and Mr. *T—ton*, have Pay allowed them, conditionally, that they be provided to draw forth upon Service at the least Warning.

That Collonel *C—ke*, Mr. *Henry H—ard*, and Mr. *N—il*, have free Quarter only.

That the Prince *Elector*, Mr. *G—scocke*, and Prince *Griffith*, henceforth pay their Quarters.

Ordered by Addition of the First Vote, That Sir *John M—ley* be forthwith paid for his Service to this House, notwithstanding his Delinquency, but so, that if he shall break out any more, he shall be irrecoverably put into the Exception.

Ordered, That all such Forces as shall be disbanded, shall be sent for *Ireland*, or otherwise disposed of out of this Kingdom.

Their Ladyships were then informed, that a Message waited at the Door from the House of Commons, and Sir *Peter W—worth*, and Mr. *B—nton*, who brought it, being let in, they found it was for the Relief of maimed Soldiers. Their

Ladyſhips referr'd it to the Lady *P—rough* to be conſidered, what Relief was fit to be given them; to whom was joined Mrs. *H—ard*, [ſometimes Maid of Honour,] ſhe having purged her Malignancy.

This Day the Houſe received divers Reports from the Committee of Complaints; and firſt, againſt the Prince *Electour*, who was accuſed that he was not ſecret to the Truſt of this Houſe, but bewraid them in their Service, and inſtead of doing their Buſineſs, did his own. The conſideration of this Buſineſs was put off till another time; as alſo another Accuſation againſt the ſaid Prince, [*viz.*] That he hath deſerted his Employment. Both brought in by the Lady *B—rington*.

The next was of ſome Articles brought in by *Brittanicus* againſt Mrs. *W—ler*'s holding Intelligence with the Enemy; which being found to be true, ſhe was voted to be Laundreſs to the Prince *Electour*'s Highneſs.

The Third was an Accuſation againſt the Lord *R—ch*, by the Lady *Mary C—layne*, alias *C—llen*, who pretended, ſhe had been plundred of Jewels, and other Commodities, by the ſaid Lord *R—ch*, to the value of 200 *l.* but it being alledged by the Lady *W—wick*, that it was done to one that had been a Commander againſt the Parliament; the Accuſation was caſt out. Then the Houſe adjourned till the next Day.

The Buſineſs this Day was the Report from the Committee of Tryers, who named in the firſt place, the Right Honourable the Earl of *D—gh* to be a Man of extraordinary Parts and Abilities; whereupon it was ordered, that his Lordſhip be Commander in chief of all the Standing Forces of this Kingdom, and that his Head-Quarters be in *Andover*,

dover, until the Houſe have further need of his Service.

Ordered, That the Lord *C—den* in regard of his great Talent, have a favourable Compoſition at the Lady *K—ts*.

Ordered, That Seignior *Ambroſio*, a politick *Italian*, be had in Remembrance for his extraordinary Pains to content this Houſe, and that when the Affairs of this Kingdom ſhall be ſettled, he be put into the *Dutchy-Office*; and in the mean time, becauſe what he had before did not content him, he be ſatisfied out of Mrs. *H—ll*'s Arrears, which are forfeited to the State for ſome petty Larcenies of hers.

This Buſineſs being over, up ſtarts the zealous and well-affected Lady, the Lady *M—may*, and moved, That a publick Faſt be appointed for imploring a Bleſſing upon Mens conſtant Affections to this Houſe, as alſo to ſtop the contagious Infection and itching Humours now crept in amongſt us, and likely to overſpread us all, if not timely ſtopped.

The Motion was embraced, and Mr. *O—aſton* [ſometime Prebend of *Peter*'s, *Weſtminſter*,] together with Doctor *S—ald*'s, Paſtor of *Jane*'s *Clerkenwell*, mentioned to preach before the Houſe: But one *Cornelius* brought an Accuſation againſt the Doctor aforeſaid, for one ill-affected to the preſent Government, he having preached lately in his Houſe in a Tub: Whereupon he was rejected, and the Lady *K—ſington* deſired, that Mr. *S—marſh* might be ſubſtituted in his Turn, of whoſe great Parts and able Performances ſhe had long Experience: Which was aſſented to accordingly.

Their Ladyſhips in the next place, taking into conſideration the great Decay of Cattel, and other Beaſts in this Kingdom during theſe unnatural Wars, thought the fitteſt Means for a Remedy, to be their Ladyſhips ſending [as they did] to the Houſe of Commons, to intreat them, that ſome of their Members might join with their Ladyſhips to conſider of the ſaid Buſineſs. They forthwith named the Lady *G—y*, and the Houſe of Commons the Lord *G—y* her Husband, to be a Committee to debate, and conſider the fitteſt Means to multiply and recruit the ſaid Beaſts, to whom they gave theſe following Inſtructions.

That they ſhall intreat all, or moſt of the *M—lys* in *England*, and all other Men of that Shape, to marry. That all ſuch Men as have vowed [whether Priſoners, or Free-men,] never to cut their Beards till his Majeſty comes to *London* to be encouraged therein.

That Monſieur *Sabran* be intreated, and the Name of the Houſe be uſed therein, to return to his Concubine here, notwithſtanding his Wife be at *Geneva*; for that *Geneva* hath not the ſame urgent neceſſity of multiplying Beaſts as this Iſland hath.

The Houſe then took into conſideration the Sale of Delinquents Eſtates; and ordered, That Mr. *H—ington* for his faithful Service done the Houſe, have the Earl of *N—aſtle*'s Baggage, as alſo the Lady *D—hire* have *Worceſter houſe*, [notwithſtanding the Vote of the Houſes at *Weſtminſter* in favour of the Earl of *S—ury*,] that ſo her Ladyſhip may be preſent with leſs Trouble at her many and ſerious Negotiations with the *Scotch* Commiſſioners.

This

This Day was preſented a Petition from the Lady *S—hop*, humbly deſiring, That ſhe might be received into their Houſe, pretending, ſhe was well-affected, was true; but that a *Scotch* Affection mix'd with a *French*, could never make a well-affected Lady. It was further urged, that the ſaid Lady had been in Arms under Collonel *S—gsby*, who was ordered to be kept up by this Houſe. The Debate was put off till another time.

A Motion was made for the putting down of Plays; whereupon the Lady *M—mouth* ſtood up, and deſired, that it might be explained what Plays; foraſmuch as if they ſhould put down *Inn* and *Inn*, it might prove much to the prejudice of the Houſe, as alſo to Mr. *T—ng*, who had deſerved well of her Ladyſhip: But Anſwer being made, Stage-plays were only underſtood. She declared, ſhe would concur with the Houſe now Sir *John S—ling* was dead; but truly ſhe lik'd his Plays well.

It was then moved by the Lady *C—mpton*, that a Thankſgiving Day might be appointed for the Recovery of the Earl of *P—oke*, which was conſented to; and Mr. *C—decott* deſired to Preach, and to ſing the Pſalm in *Engliſh*, and not in *Hebrew*.

Ordered, That Thanks be given to Mr. *R—inſon* for his zealous and devout Prayer, that the ſaid Lord might once more climb up *May hill*.

The Houſe then appointed Commiſſioners to go to his Majeſty, [*viz.*] The Ladies of *O—rd*, and *S—ford*, together with the Lady *M—y*, to move his Majeſty's haſte, and gain the Royal Aſſent, that ſo Happy a Union may follow.

This Day alſo, they paſs'd an *Act of Oblivion* to the Lady *D—keith*, the Lady *Katherine S—tt*, the Lady *A—bigny*, and Mrs. *R—per* for their Delinquency in the Enemy's Quarters.

Soon after, the Lady *N—ton*, Door-keeper of this Houſe, complained of Sir *Robert H—low*, a Member of the Houſe of Commons, for attempting to deface her: Which hapned thus; The ſaid Lady being a zealous *Independent*, and ſo one of the Saints, and Sir *Robert* having found out that ſhe was likewiſe Painted, he pretended that ſhe came within his Ordinance of Idolatry, Saints painted, Croſſes, *&c.* But ſome Friends of the ſaid Door keeper's urging on her behalf, that none did ever yet attempt to adore or worſhip her, ſhe was juſtified: And the Ladies hereupon declared, That if any Perſon, by virtue of any Power whatſoever, pretend to be derived from the Houſe of Commons, or any other Court, ſhall go about to impeach, hinder, or diſturb any Lady from Painting, Waſhing, or Adorning her ſelf to her beſt advantage, as alſo from Painting of Hair, and Inveſting of Teeth, that that Act is a great Breach of the Privilege of the Houſe, and that the Offenders ſhall be proceeded againſt accordingly.

In the laſt place, their Ladyſhips being to adjourn for ſome Weeks, deſired, That firſt a main Point of Divinity might be decided: What is meant by the words *Due Benevolence* in the *N—w T——nt*; and in order thereunto, they ſent unto the Miniſters of the Aſſembly, intreating to make ſome Declaration concerning the ſame. The Meſſengers found the Aſſembly buſie about their Affairs, endeavouring to bring the Text, *Kiſs the Son leſt he be angry*, to prove *Presbytery*; yet under-

underſtanding their Ladyſhips Requeſt, they left it preſently, and fell upon the Debate of the ſaid *Due Benevolence*, which I do not intend to ſet down particularly, it being not to be found in the Ladies Journal: Only I hear, that Mr. *Obadiah S—wick*'s Opinion was, That if a Man had been abſent from his Houſe any time, that then the Conjugal Duty obliged him to ſolace her now, and anon too, that is to ſay, twice within the compaſs of a natural Day. But it being adjudg'd, that no Rule can be obſerved, for that depended upon Mens natural Conſtitutions, and Health; it was declared by them, That all, and every Man coupled in Bond of Matrimony and Wedlock, is engaged to comfort his Mate and Fellow-feeler, as often as his Strength and Conſtitution of Body will poſſibly permit.

Their Ladyſhips having received the Definition deſired them, to make it *Jure Divino*, and to publiſh it, for that ſo no Husband in the Country may pretend ignorance: Whereupon their Holineſſes made this enſuing Canon.

Die Jovis 25 Martii, 1647.

IT *is by theſe Preſents declared and decreed to all the World, by the Council called and met at* Weſtminſter *in the Kingdom of* Great Britain, *That all Men, who have, or ſhall take upon them the State of Matrimony, are by their Vows and Senſe of H—y W—t, obliged to comfort, viſit, and comply with Wives, as often as their Strength of Body will permit and give them leave; and tho' they ſhould pretend it ſtands not with their Buſineſs, that they be thereunto obliged notwithſtanding.*

This we enjoin and command, under Penalty of being debarred the S——t, of which we hope to have the monopoly.

The Day following, in the Evening this Doctrine being brought to their Ladyſhips, they ordered, That the Speaker of their Houſe ſhould give Thanks to the ſaid Miniſters of the Aſſ—bly of D—vines, for their great Care and Pains in Reforming this Kingdom, and in particular for this preſent Declaration. After which, they ordered theſe their Votes to be printed; and ſo Adjourned till further time.

The APOLOGY *of the Duke of* LAUDERDAILE.

IT is a hard Task to ſatisfie [even Friends,] againſt the Slanders which Ignorance or Malice may eaſily throw upon the greateſt Innocence; and although I hear that I have had a large ſhare of the Perſecution of Tongues in and about *London*, in *Coffee-Houſes*, and elſewhere, theſe divers Months paſt, yet I ſhall not endeavour at this time, ſo much as to ſatisfie my Friends in all the Particulars I hear, which, I hope, I ſhall be able to do in good time, and ſo clearly, that I may eaſily undeceive all ſober and unbiaſſed Men; But one thing, I hear, is talk'd, and of ſo horrid a Nature, and yet ſo groundleſs, ſo impudently falſe, and ſo eaſily diſproved, that I cannot forbear a moment to demonſtrate my Innocence to my Friends: I hear it hath been ſaid at *London*, that I was a great cauſe and promo-

ter

ter of the late King's Murther, bringing up a Declaration from *Scotland*, which was made the ground upon which they proceeded to the Murther, and that I was one that had furthered that Horrid Act. This is ſo monſtrouſly falſe and ſo groundleſs, that I need ſay little to my Juſtification; for it is well known to the King, and many thouſands, how faithfully and how diligently I ſerved the laſt King all that Year 1648, and what my Perſecutions and my Sufferings were from the King's Enemies, both in *England* and in *Scotland*, from that Year even to his Majeſty's happy Reſtauration: Yet it ſhall not be enough for me to prove, that that Accuſation is falſe; I undertake to demonſtrate, that is utterly impoſſible.

I waited upon the laſt King at *Carisbrooke Caſtle* in the Iſle of *Wight*, with *William* Duke of *Hamilton* [then Earl of *Lanerick*,] and the late Earl of *Lowdon*, [then Chancellor of *Scotland*;] we carried a Proteſtation in the Name of the Kingdom of *Scotland* againſt the Four Bills, which were at that time impoſed upon the King by the Two Houſes of Parliament. We did then at *Caresbrooke Caſtle*, receive the King's Commands for engaging *Scotland*, and raiſing of an Army for his Delivery and Reſtitution. We came thence to *London*; and in *January* 1647, [according to the Account of *England*,] we parted from *London* towards *Scotland*, where we arrived in the beginning of that *February*: Now if ever I ſaw *London*, or any Place near it, from that *January* 1647, [according to the Account of *England*,] until the Second of *October* 1651, on which day I was brought a Priſoner to the *Tower* after *Worceſter*, then I do willingly ſubmit to the Infamy,

Infamy, Guilt, and Puniſhment due to the Accuſation, which ſhould be more bitter to me than the cruelleſt Death, and Attainder of me and my Family. This, I hope, proves the utter Impoſſibility of my bringing up ſuch a Declaration.

My next Task muſt be to demonſtrate as great and abſolute an Impoſſibility of my having any Acceſſion to ſuch a Declaration in *Scotland*, [if any was made and ſent to the Rebels in *England*:] I came to *Scotland* [as I told you,] in *February* 1647. there we began the late King's Service, the engaging *Scotland* for him, and the raiſing of an Army; but very ſoon we found the Oppoſition of them, who called themſelves the *Kirk* Party. The Earl of *Lowdon*, then Chancellor, abandoned us, and join'd with that Party; yet *William* Duke of *Hamilton* [then Earl of *Lanerick*,] and I, carried on the Buſineſs.

The late King of Bleſſed Memory, commanded Sir *Marmaduke Langdale*, Sir *Philip Muſgrave*, and Sir *William Blackſton*, to Correſpond with, and take Meaſures from the Earl of *Lanerick* and me; and we correſponded with them conſtantly under the Names of *John Read* and *William Black*. This Sir *Philip Muſgrave* can teſtifie, as alſo *Arthur Barclay* yet alive, and now a Gentleman of the King's Privy Chamber, who was conſtantly a Meſſenger between us.

Moſt of the Nobility and Gentry joined heartily in the Engagement, and ſo did the People, in ſpight of all the Thunderings of all the Pulpits againſt us; and the Army drew to a Rendezvous in *July*; and then was I commanded by all that was in Power, both in *Edinburgh*, and the Army, to go to *Holland* to invite his Majeſty that now is, [then Prince,] to come and command the Army

my that was raiſed for his Father's Service. I Embarqued on the 4th of *Auguſt* 1648, and waited upon his Majeſty in the *Downes*, where he then commanded his Father's Fleet. There we got the News of the Fatal Defeat of the *Scotch* Army under *James* Duke of *Hamilton*. I ſtay'd with the King about three Weeks in the Fleet, and then waited upon him all that Year. That Winter the King deſign'd to ſend me into *Scotland*, for his Service again. I procured a Paſs from them in Power in *Scotland*, to come to *Scotland*, upon pretence of ſettling private Buſineſs, and to remove out of it again. Aſſoon as my Paſs came, the King ſent me at *Chriſtmaſs* into *Scotland* with Inſtructions, which none knew but his Majeſty and the late Prince of *Orange*, who gave a Man of War which tranſported me thither. As ſoon as I Landed, I found that thoſe who after the Defeat of the Army, had uſurped the Power, and then proceeded with great Violence againſt all thoſe who were joined in the Engagement, and moſt particularly againſt my ſelf. I found that *William* Duke of *Hamilton* [then Earl of *Lanerick*,] was confined to his Houſe; and that both he and I, with many other Perſons of Quality, were turned out of all Employments, and declared incapable of all Publick Truſt, and that I had been Fined, and my Tenants Ruined; yet truſting to my Paſs, I went to *Edinburgh*, where ſome of my Friends ſaw me; but I was very far from being either willing or able to meddle with any Judicature. I ſpoke with the Duke of *Hamilton*, and at my Return, I found that *Scotland* would quickly be too hot either for him or me: For the Rebels in *London* having heard from *Holland*, that I was ſent in a Man of War to *Scotland*; they preſently

preſently took jealouſie, and diſpach'd one *Roe* to their Friends in *Scotland*, to demand the then Earl of *Lanerick* and me to be delivered to them: Aſſoon as theſe Letters came to *Edinburgh*, a private Committee was called; and though the Earl of *Caſſel*, and Lord *Balmerinoch*, [both dead,] did plead the Faith that they had given to me in their Paſs; yet they perfidiouſly reſolved to have delivered me; but the Lord *Balmerinoch* gave me timely Warning: So I fled in the Night for my Life, and I brought away my Lord of *Lanerick* out of his Reſtraint; and ſo both of us went Aboard of my Ship, and ſailed to *Holland*. From the *Low Countries*, we ſtirred not until we waited on his Majeſty in *June* 1650. What Declarations were made in *Scotland*, or ſent to the Rebels in *London*, for countenancing the late King's horrid Murther, or whether any ſuch was or no, I cannot determine; nor is it my Buſineſs to juſtifie thoſe that were then in Power, [who, I am ſure, were my Perſecutors and Enemies;] but, I am ſure, I have demonſtrated, that as it was utterly impoſſible that I could have been the Carrier of ſuch a Declaration from *Scotland*; ſo it is impoſſible that I could have had the leaſt hand in carrying any ſuch Declaration: And if I ſaw *Scotland* from the 4th of *Auguſt* 1648, until *June* 1650, [excepting thoſe few Days when the King ſent me thither, and from whence I fled for my Life,] I ſhall acknowledge the Guilt; or if ever I medled in any Judicature of *Scotland*, Civil or Eccleſiaſtick, from the 4th of *Auguſt* 1648, till after the King was Crowned in *Scotland*, then let me ſuffer any Puniſhment.

The

The PATENT *of Creation of* Thomas Howard, *Earl of* Surrey, *Duke of* Norfolk. 5 H. 8.

REX *omnibus ad quos, &c. ſalutem. Cum boni principis & Reipub. ſtudioſi officium imprimis eſſe arbitremur, ut vivi ſtrenui, ac optime de ſe, Reque publica meriti* [*quorum virtute, præclariſque facinoribus non ſceptri Solum Gloria, & dignitas, ſed comes ſubditar. fortunæ, ſalus, vita, Divina Denique, & Humana omnia Conſervantur,*] *muneribus ornentur, honoribus Extollantur, cumulatiſque premiis honeſtentur, tum ut virtuti ſua gratia referatur, tum vero ut quam plurimi generoſa animo prediti* [*hujus modi exceptis quaſi ſtimulis incitati*] *eadem via ad paras virtutis fructus prevenire vitantur; proinde Illuſtriſſimum Thomam commitatem Surrie conſanguinorum chariſſimum, ac commitatem Mareſchallum Angli & Theſaurarium Angliæ Larganareum Liberalitatis remunerationem cum primis promeritam judicamus, qui trajiciebatur à nobis ad Bellum verſus Gallos pro ſciæ Romanæ Eccleſiæ Defenſione, & noſtri Juris Receptione ſuſceptum tuendum Boreali hujus Regni noſtri plage à nobis perfect? Dum nos in Gallia Bellum gereremus. Jacobum Scotorum Regem affinitatis, amicitieſque vinculo, ac ſanctiſſimo* [*quod nobiſcum habebat*] *federe violato, cum numeroliſſia hominum multitudine in dictum Regnum noſtrum hoſtiliter irrumpentem, ac omnia igneque ferro crudeliter vaſtantem, ducto in eum Exercitu, ac ſignis iniquo etiam loco ſecum Collatis apud Brankſton in Commit' noſtro Northumber'*

thumber' divina ope, & ingenti ſua virtuta, egregiaque Fidelium noſtrorum. Opera profligavit, ipſam Regem Scotorum, cum maxima procerum, ac Nobilium ſuorum parte trucidavit, injuriamque nobis ç & eidem noſtro Regno illatam cum celebri fami, & Gloria vindicavit. Quocirca ut plurimis ejuſdem Thomæ meritis equa premia rependamus, ſciatis, quod nos de gratia noſtra ſpirituali, ac ex certa ſcientia, & mero motu noſtris præfatum Thomam conſanguineum noſtrum in Ducem Norfolciæ Eriginus, Creamus, Inſignimus, Præficimus, & Ordinamus, ac Nomen, Titulum, Statum, Stilum, Locum, Sedem, Preminentiam, Honorem, Authoritatem, & Dignitatem Ducis Norfolciæ in tam amplis altioribus, & honorificis modo, & forma, prout aliquis Dux Norff' preantea unquam habuit uſus, aut gaviſus fuit, eidem conſanguineo noſtro damus, & concedimus per preſentes. Ac eum de eodem nomine cum altitori, & Honorificio Titulo, Statu, Stilo, Sede, Loco, Honore, Authoritate, Preminentia, & Dignitate, quibus aliqua perſona exiſtens Dux Norff' per antea unquam habuit uſus, ſeu gaviſus fuit, ceteriſque honoribus eidem appendent, & annexum per Gladii Cruciuram, Cappe, & Circuli Aurei impoſitionem in Capite ac Traditionem Virgæ, Aurea reoliter investimus. Habend' & Tenend' nomen, Stilum, Titulum, Sedem, Locum, Honorem, Authoritatem, & Dignitatem Ducis Norf' Præfat. Thome Duci, & heredibus Maſculis de corpore ſuo exeunt, in per petm', &c. Et ut illo victoria in poſterium beatur' in memoria, & cunctis videatur, illam perpetratam fuiſſe conductione, Regimine, & Gubernacame dicti conſanguinei noſtri de uberiori gratia noſtra damus, & Concedimus Præfat' Duci, & heredibus ſuis temporibus futuris in principium:

in

in ſignum illius Vitterii, quod ipſe Dux, & Heredes ſui predict' portent, aut gerant in medio Bende Armorum proprii nominis Præfat'. Ducis [viz.] *Scuto de Haward integram Medietatem ſuperioris partis Leonis Sagitæ preconſeſſi, Depictatique radiis Coloribus Armorum, Regni Scotiæ, quæ dictus idem Jacobus nuper Rex Scotorum portavit, Habend', Tenend', dictam medietatem partis Leonis Rubei Sagittæ one Conſeſſi, depictatique modo, & Figura predictis Præfat' Duci, & Heredibus ſuis predictis imprim', &c.*

An Act concerning the Title, Name, and Dignity of the Earl of Arundell, *and for the annexing of the Caſtle, Honour, and Mannor and Lordſhip of* Arundell *in the County of* Suſſex, *with the Titles and Dignities of the Barouies of* Fitz Allen, Clun, *and* Oſwaldeſtre *and* Maltravers, *and divers other Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments, hereafter in this Act mentioned, being now Parſel of the Poſſeſſions of* Thomas *Earl of* Arundell *and* Surrey, *Earl Marſhal of* England *to the ſaid Title, Name, and Dignity of the Earl of* Arundell.

IN all humble wiſe ſheweth, *&c. Thomas* Earl of *Arundell, &c.* That whereas the Title, Name, and Dignity of Earl of *Arundell* is, and from the time whereof the Memory of Man is not to the contrary, hath been Real and Local, and, *&c.* enjoined by himſelf, and ſuch

ſuch of the Anceſtors of the ſaid Earl as have enjoyed the Inheritance of the Caſtle, Lordſhip and Honour of *Arundell*, *&c.* and by reaſon of the Inheritance and Seſin of the ſaid Caſtle, Honour, *&c.* The ſaid Earl and his Anceſtors, *&c.* have been Earls of *Arundell*, *&c.* and thereby had their Places in your Majeſty's Parliament and Council, and elſewhere as Earls of *Arundell.*

And whereas the large Revenues that were in former Times were wont to ſupport the ſaid Title, Name, *&c.* have in the latter Ages been diſmembred, and diminiſhed by divers and ſundry Alienations, *&c.* and in future Times may be much more leſſened, if ſome Prevention be not thereof had, which no way ſo well be had, as by annexing as well of the ſaid Caſtle, Honour, and Lordſhip, as alſo divers others of the Baronies, Lordſhips, *&c.* of the ſaid Earl herein mentioned, to be annexed to the ſaid Title, Name, and Dignity of Earl of *Arundell* in ſuch ſort, as that hereafter the ſaid Caſtle, Honour, and Lordſhip, and other the Baronies, Lands, Tenements, *&c.* may continually remain to thoſe of the Blood of the ſaid Earl that ſhall be hereafter, as aforeſaid, have, uſe, and enjoy the Title and Dignity of Earl of *Arundell*, that ſo they may the better ſupport the ſaid Titles, Names and Dignities, and be the more able to ſerve your moſt Excellent Majeſty, your Heirs and Succeſſors in their Eſtates and Quality; He moſt humbly beſeecheth Your moſt Excellent Majeſty, that it may be, *&c.* Enacted by the Authority aforeſaid, That the ſaid Title, Name, and Dignity of Earl of *Arundell*, and Caſtle, Honour, and Lordſhip of *Arundell*, and Baronies hereafter enſuing, that is to ſay, the ſaid Titles, Names, and Dignities of Lord *Fitz Allen*,

Allen, *Clun*, and *Oſwaldeſtre*, and Lord *Maltravers*, and all Places, Preheminences, Arms, Enſigns, and Dignities to the ſaid Earldom, Caſtle, Honour, and Baronies belonging, and the Borough and the Mannor of *Arundell* aforeſaid, *&c.* and the Foreſt of *Arundell*, *&c.* and the two Parks, *&c.* to the ſaid Caſtle and Mannor, *&c.* belonging, *&c.* [with divers other Lands in the Counties of *Suſſex*, *Surrey*, and *Hampſhire*,] *Arundell* Houſe in the County of *Middleſex*, *&c.* may and ſhall be for ever by virtue of this Act, *&c.* be and remain, *&c.* to him the ſaid *Thomas* Earl of *Arundell* and *Surrey*, and Heirs Males of his Body lawfully begotten, *&c.* and for default of ſuch Iſſue, *&c.* then to the Heirs of the Body of the ſaid Earl lawfully begotten, *&c.* and for default of ſuch Iſſue, then to the Right Honourable the Lord *William Howard*, Unckle to the ſaid Earl, [Son of *Thomas* late Duke of *Norfolk*,] and the Heirs Male of the Body of the ſaid Lord *William*, *&c.* and for default of ſuch Iſſue to the ſaid *Thomas* Earl of *Arundell*, and *Surrey*, and his Heirs for ever.

A Copy of a Commiſſion of General, granted by King Charles *the Second*, Aug. 3. 1660. *to* George *Duke of* Albemarle, &c.

CHarles the Second, by the Grace of God, King of *England*, *Scotland*, *France*, and *Ireland*, defender of the Faith, *&c.* To our right Truſty, and right Well-beloved Counſin and Councellor, *George* Duke of *Albemarle*, Maſter of our Horſe, and Knight of the moſt Noble Order of the Garter, greeting. Know ye, that

we repoſing ſpecial Truſt and Confidence in your approved Wiſdom, Fidelity, Valour, and great Abilities, have aſſigned, made, conſtituted, and ordained, and by theſe our Letters Patents, do aſſign, make, conſtitute, and ordain you to be our Captain General of all our Armies and Land-Forces, and Men whatſoever now levied or raiſed, or which hereafter ſhall be raiſed or levied in or out of our Realms of *England*, *Scotland*, and *Ireland*, and Dominion of *Wales*, or any of them, or any other our Dominions and Territories whatſoever, and Aſſembled, or to be Aſſembled into an Army, or Armies, with them, both to reſiſt and withſtand all Invaſions, Tumults, Seditions, Conſpiracies, and Attempts, that may happen within our ſaid Realms, Dominions, and Territories, or any of them, to be made againſt our Perſon, State, Safety, Crown and Dignity, and to be led into of our ſaid Realms, Dominions, and Territories, or any of them, and there to invade, aſſault, repel, reſiſt, fight with, ſubdue, ſlay, and kill all, every, or any Enemies or Rebels againſt us of what Nation ſoever, that in our ſaid Kingdoms, Dominions, Territories, or any of them, or any Part, or Parts thereof, ſhall raiſe, make, cauſe adhere to, or be part of any Inſurrection, Commotion, Tumult, Sedition, Conſpiracy, or Attempt whatſoever againſt our Perſon, State, Crown and Dignity. And we further have aſſigned, made, conſtituted, and ordained, and by theſe our Letters Patents, do aſſign, make, conſtitute, and ordain you the ſaid Armies and Land-Forces, and every part thereof; and all Officers, and others whatſoever employed, or to be employed in or concerning the ſame, with all ſuch other Forces of what Nation ſoever as ſhall be hereafter joined

joined to the ſaid Armies and Land-Forces, or any part thereof, to rule, govern, command, diſpoſe, and imploy in: For, or about ſuch Defences, Offences, Invaſions, Executions, and other Military and Hoſtile Acts and Services, as are and ſhall be by us from time to time, and at any time reſpectively directed, limited, or appointed in, or by theſe our Letters Patents, or by our Inſtructions which we have delivered unto you under our Sign Manual, or which ſhall be hereafter directed, limited, or appointed by any Inſtructions under our Sign Manual, Signet, Privy Seal, or Great Seal delivered, or to be delivered unto you, or ſent and received, or to be ſent and received by you. And further, we have given and granted unto you full Power and Authority, and hereby do give and grant unto you full Power and Authority the ſame Armies and Land Forces, and every, or any part thereof, and the Men ſo levied, raiſed, or aſſembled, or to be levied or aſſembled, or ſent, conducted, or brought, or that otherwiſe ſhall come to you, either by any other ſpecial Order or Command, or by any other Commiſſion whatſoever given, and granted by us, or by Authority of this Commiſſion, and according to the intent thereof as aforeſaid by your ſelf, or by your Deputy, or Deputies, Commanders, Captains, or other Officer or Officers, as to you ſhall ſeem meet, to try, exerciſe, array, and put in readineſs, and them, and every of them, after their Abilities, Degrees, and Faculties, or according to the Proviſion of Arms appointed for them, well and ſufficiently to cauſe to be weaponed and armed, and to take, or cauſe to be taken, the Muſters of them by the Commiſſary General, or other Commiſſaries, or Officers, whom you ſhall aſſign as often

often as you ſee cauſe, as alſo of any of our Trained Bands within our ſaid Kingdoms, Dominions, and Territories, or any of them, and in all, and every other place, and Places, into which by virtue of this our Commiſſion, or by virtue of any other Commiſſion, or Warrant from us, you ſhall lead or ſend, or in which you ſhall, according to the purport of this Commiſſion, find any part of the ſaid Army, or Armies, or Men, as aforeſaid: And alſo the ſaid Army, or Armies, Men, and Perſons ſo Arrayed, Tried, Exerciſed, and Armed, as well Horſemen as Footmen of all Kinds and Degrees to Govern, Lead, and Conduct againſt all, and ſingular Enemies, Rebels, Traytors, and all and every other Perſon or Perſons attempting any thing againſt our Perſon, State, Safety, Crown, and Dignity, within our ſaid Kingdoms, Dominions, and Territories, every, or any of them: And our ſaid Armies and Land-Forces, and the Men aforeſaid from time to time, and at any time to divide, diſtribute, and diſpoſe into Parts, Regiments, Troops, and Companies, or otherwiſe at your diſcretion: And the ſame Army, or Armies, and the ſaid Parts, Regiments, Troops, or Companies, or any of them, to convey, or ſend, or cauſe to be conveyed, or ſent by Land, or by Sea, or other Paſſage by Letter to any Place, or Places, for the Service aforeſaid, reſpectfully, according to your direction; and with the ſaid Enemies, Rebels, Traytors, and other Perſon, or Perſons, ſo attempting as aforeſaid, to fight, and them to invade, reſiſt, repreſs, purſue, and follow in, and unto any part of our ſaid Kingdoms, Dominions, and Territories, every, or any of them, and them to ſubdue, ſlay, and kill, and to do, fulfil, and execute all, and ſingular other Acts, Matters, and Things what-

whatſoever reſpectively, which ſhall be in your Diſcretion requiſite, either by Leading, Conducting, Government, Order, and Rule of our ſaid Armies and Land-Forces, and Men, and every Part of them, or for the conſervation of Us, our State, and Safety, and for the ſuppreſſion and ſubduing of our Enemies, Rebels, Traytors, or other Offenders, as aforeſaid: And further, to do, uſe, and execute againſt, and upon the ſaid Enemies, Rebels, Traitors, and others, as aforeſaid, and their Adherents, and every of them, as occaſion ſhall require by your Direction, the Law Martial, or Law Marſhal, as our Captain General: And of ſuch Enemies, Rebels, Traytors, and other Offenders, as aforeſaid taken, or apprehended, or being brought into ſubjection, to ſave from Death, or other Puniſhment, whom you ſhall think good to be ſo ſaved, and to ſlay, deſtroy, and put to execution of Death, or otherwiſe to puniſh ſuch, or ſo many of them, as you ſhall think meet by your diſcretion to be put to Death, or otherwiſe puniſhed reſpectively by any manner of Means, according to the Law Martial, or Law Marſhal, to the terrour of all other Offenders. And we do further, by theſe our Letters Patent, give and grant to you our Captain General, full Power and Authority for us, and in our Name, as occaſion ſhall require, according to your diſcretion, by publick Proclamation, or otherwiſe, to make tender of our Royal Grace, Mercy, and Pardon, to all ſuch Enemies, Rebels, or Traytors, as ſhall in our ſaid Kingdoms, Dominions, and Territories, or any of them, ſubmit themſelves to us, and deſire to be received to our Grace, Mercy, and Pardon, and according to your diſcretion, to receive to our Grace, and Mercy, and to pardon all, and every

ſuch Perſon, and Perſons, as ſhall ſo ſubmit, and deſire to be received to our Grace, Mercy, and Pardon, as aforeſaid. And we do hereby grant, for Us, our Heirs, and Succeſſors, that every ſuch Perſon, and Perſons, ſo ſubmitting, and deſiring, and ſo admitted by you unto our Grace and Mercy, and pardoned by you as aforeſaid, ſhall be by us pardoned, and ſhall, and may have, and ſue out Pardons accordingly. And further, Our Will and Pleaſure is, and by theſe Preſents, we do give and grant you full Power and Authority, that in caſe any Invaſion of Enemies, Inſurrection, Commotion, or Rebellion, ſhall happen to be, increaſe, or begin to ariſe within our ſaid Kingdoms, Dominions, and Territories, or any of them, that then from time to time, and at all times, when any ſuch ſhall be, increaſe, or begin to ariſe, you may with ſuch Power and Forces, as you ſhall think fit, either by your ſelf, or by others deputed, or commanded by you, reſiſt, repreſs, and reform the ſame by Battel, or any kind of Force, or at your diſcretion by ſuch other Proceedings as by the Laws of our ſaid Realms reſpectively, or the Law Martial, or Laws Marſhal, or by the intent or purport of this Commiſſion may otherwiſe be uſed; And for the better execution of this our Commiſſion, we do further give, and grant to you full Power and Authority from time to time, and at all times at your diſcretion, to command, and require of, and from all, or any of our Lieutenants ſpecial, and their Deputy Lieutenants of our ſeveral Counties of and within our ſaid Kingdoms, Dominions, and Territories, and of or from every or any of them, to ſend to you, or to ſuch place or places as you ſhall appoint, ſuch numbers of Able men for the Wars, as well Horſemen

men and Footmen of the Trained Bands in the ſaid Counties reſpectively, or others ſufficiently armed and furniſhed at ſuch time, and times, and from time to time, as you in your diſcretion ſhall appoint, and require: And further, Alſo from time to time, and at all times at your diſcretion to give and grant to any Perſon, or Perſons, as to you it ſhall ſeem meet, any Commiſſion, or Commiſſions, Warrant, and Authority, for the levying and raiſing of any Troops or Companies of any Horſe-men or Foot-men in any place whatſoever within our ſaid Kingdoms, Dominions, and Territories, or any of them, or for the bringing or conducting of them to you, or to ſuch Place or Places as you ſhall from time to time, or at any time in your diſcretion aſſign and appoint. And further alſo, we do give and grant to you our Captain General, full Power and Authority from time to time, and at all times, by Writing, under your Hand and Seal, to appoint, ordain, and conſtitute one, or more Deputy or Deputies, of what Quality or Condition whatſoever, or by what Name or Names ſoever you ſhall think fit, under you, and in your ſtead to do, and execute all, or any the Powers and Authority whatſoever, by theſe Preſents granted by us unto you. And alſo, We give you full Power and Authority, to appoint all, and every, or any ſuperiour Officer, or Officers, or Officer or Officer in chief, of what Quality or Dignity ſoever, reſpectively as well of the Horſe-men as of Foot-men, and of the Ordinance, Artillery, or Amunition of, or belonging to, or that ſhall hereafter in any wiſe belong to the ſaid Army or Armies, or Land-Forces; and all and every Collonel, Captain, and other inferiour Officers, and all and

every other Commander and Commanders, Officer and Officers whatſoever, which ſhall by you at any time, and from time to time be thought fit or requiſite for the better government of the ſaid Army or Armies, or Land-Forces, or any part thereof, and for the execution of the intent and purport of theſe our Letters Pattents. And further, We do give and grant unto you full Power and Authority to appoint within our ſaid Army or Armies, one Provoſt Marſhal, or more Provoſt Marſhals according to your diſcretion, to uſe, and exerciſe that Office in ſuch caſes as you ſhall think requiſite, and for the execution of the Law Martial, or Law Marſhal, according to your diſcretion, and Warrant given to him, or them, and the intent and purport of theſe our Letters Patents, and as the Law Martial, or Law Marſhal requireth. And further, We do give and grant to you full Power and Authority, to hold, or cauſe to be held within the ſaid Army or Armies, or any part thereof, one, or more Military, or Martial, or Mareſhal Court or Courts, from time to time, and and at all times, according to your Diſcretion or Command; and alſo, in the ſame Court or Courts, or otherwiſe, by your ſelf, or by your Deputy or Deputies, or by or in your Council of War, or by any other Ways, or Proceedings, or Courſe, as to you ſhall ſeem meeteſt, to hear, examine, determine, and puniſh all Mutinies, Diſobediences, Departures from Captains, Commanders and Governours, and all capital and criminal Offences whatſoever. And we further give and grant to all, and every ſuch Deputy or Deputies, ſuperiour Officer and Officers, and Officers and Officer in Chief, and all and every other Commander or Officer, ſo as aforeſaid by you appointed, ordained,

dained, or conſtituted, or otherwiſe according to the purport and intent of theſe Preſents, appointed, ordained, or conſtituted full Power and Authority to do and execute whatſoever he or they reſpectively ſhall be by you ſo ordained, or appointed, to do according to the Tenour of theſe Preſents: And alſo, We give and grant unto you full Power and Authority at your diſcretion from time to time, and at all times, to make, conſtitute, and ordain Laws, Statutes, Ordinances, for the Government, ordering, ruling, and Military Diſcipline of our ſaid Army and Armies, and every, or any part thereof, and of all and every Officer, and Officers, Perſon and Perſons, of, in, and belonging to the ſame, and for touching, and concerning all and every the Priſoners, Goods, Booty, or Spoil, that ſhall or may happen to be at any time by you; or any Officer, or any other Perſon of the ſaid Army, or Armies, or any part thereof taken, and concerning all other Matters whatſoever in any wiſe to the ſaid Army, or this your Employment belonging to the ſame Laws, Statutes, Ordinances, and every of them, to cauſe to be proclaimed in ſuch Places, and at ſuch Times as to you ſhall ſeem meet, and the ſame, and every of them, to put in execution, and to appoint and ordain ſuch Pains and Penalties, either by loſs of Life, or Member, Place, Office, Money, or Goods, or otherwiſe in the ſaid Laws, Ordinances and Statutes, and every, or any of them, as in your diſcretion you ſhall think meet, and to cauſe to be attached, apprehended, and impriſoned, or pardoned, or left, or ſet at liberty at your diſcretion, all, and every, or any Perſon or Perſons offending againſt any of the ſaid Statutes, Laws, and Ordinances, and againſt, or

con-

concerning ſuch Perſon or Perſons to command ſuch Proceedings, and to uſe ſuch Juſtice, or ſuch Mercy, as to you ſhall ſeem moſt meet. And we do hereby grant and ordain, that all and every the Statutes, Laws and Ordinances, ſo from time to time, and at any time to be made, conſtituted, or ordained by you, ſhall have full power, and force, and remain, and be in the ſaid Army and Armies, and every part thereof reſpectively in full power and force, according as you ſhall make, conſtitute, or ordain: And further, that you ſhall have from time to time, and at all times, during the Force of this our Commiſſion, power to Pardon, and remit all and every Crimes and Offences whatſoever, committed againſt the ſaid Laws, Statutes, or Ordinances, or any of them, or againſt the Laws Martial, and Law Marſhal in the ſaid Army, or any part thereof, or by any Officer, Soldier, or other, being part thereof, or belonging thereunto. And we further, for Us, our Heirs, and Succeſſors, do grant by theſe our Letters Pattents, that no Perſon or Perſons whatſoever, ſhall be proceeded againſt, moleſted, ſued, or in any wiſe impeached, in any Court whatſoever, or otherwiſe for any Crime or Offence whatſoever, ſo as aforeſaid by you pardoned or remitted, nor ſued, impeached, or moleſted in any Court whatſoever, for, or by reaſon of any Matter or Cauſe whatſoever, being finally determined and ſentenced according to the Power and Juriſdiction by theſe Preſents given, and granted by us as aforeſaid. And further, We give and grant unto you Power, Liberty, and Authority upon all occaſions, when to you it ſhall ſeem meet and neceſſary, if you be

not

not by us otherwiſe expreſly commanded to come, and repair to our Perſon whereſoever we ſhall be, and there, or at, in, near, or about our Court and Houſhold, to remain until we ſhall ſignifie to you our expreſs Pleaſure for your Departure or Return. And further alſo, We give and grant to you full Power and Authority from time to time, and at all times, to appoint and conſtitute one or more Commiſſary or Commiſſaries, and any other Officer or Officers, as to you ſhall ſeem meeteſt, for the providing and taking up of Victuals, and all, or any other Proviſion for the ſaid Army or Armies, or any part thereof, and to give him or them reſpectively Power and Warrant, ſo to do from time to time, and at all times within any part of our ſaid Kingdoms, Dominions, and Territories, or any part of them: And further alſo, by your ſelf, and others deputed or authorized by you, to take up, and uſe ſuch Carriages, Horſes, Boats, or other Veſſels, as in your diſcretion, and as often as you ſhall think meet, ſhall be needful for the conveying, or conducting of the ſaid Army or Armies, or any part thereof, or for bringing or carrying Ammunition, Ordinance, Artillery, Victuals, and all, or any other Proviſions neceſſary or requiſite for the ſaid Army or Armies, or any part thereof, to or from any Place or Places, according to the intent of theſe Preſents, and to that intent and purpoſe to Depute and Authorize, and to give Warrant or Warrants to any Perſon or Perſons whatſoever, for ſuch taking up, and uſe as aforeſaid: And further, from time to time to give Warrant and Authority to our Treaſurer or Treaſurers of the ſaid Army or Armies for the time being, for the iſſuing and paying of all, and every ſuch Sums

of

of Money, as are or ſhall be from time to time payable to any Perſon or Perſons whatſoever, in the ſaid Army or Armies, or any Part thereof, or due to any Perſon or Perſons whatſoever, by reaſon of the ſame reſpectfully. And we do further hereby give Power and Authority to you our Captain General, for Cauſes eſpecial, moving you by your Letters under your Seal from time to time, when, and as often as to you it ſhall ſeem meet, to grant Safe conduct, as well general as ſpecial, in all Places, by Land or Water, to any Perſon or Perſons whatſoever, and generally to do, and execute all and every thing and things, which to the Office of a Captain General of an Army under us, doth belong, and which for the good and ſafety of Us, our State, and the Government, and Diſcipline of our ſaid Army, ſhall be by you thought expedient and neceſſary. And for the better execution of this our Service, We do further give unto you our Captain General, full Power and Authority, as you in your diſcretion ſhall think meet; and for the Advancement of this our Service, to command all our Gariſons, our Forts, and Caſtles, now fortified, or hereafter to be fortified, and to amove, diſplace, or continue the Governours, Captains, or other inferiour Officers, Soldiers, and Gariſons, as to your diſcretion ſhall ſeem meet, and the occaſion of the Service ſhall require, and to furniſh the ſame Gariſons, Caſtles and Forts, with other Governours, Commanders, and Soldiers, as you ſhall think meet, for the ſafety and good of our Armies, and the Advancement of our Service; to have, hold, exerciſe, and enjoy All, and every the Powers and Authorities aforeſaid, by you our ſaid Captain General, and by your Deputy and

Deputies

Deputies as aforeſaid, during our Will and Pleaſure. And we Will and Command you our Captain General, that with all ſpeed you do execute the Premiſes with effect. Wherefore we Will and Command all, and ſingular Lieutenants of our Counties, and Lieutenants ſpecial, Dukes, Marqueſſes, Earls, Viſcounts, Barons, Baronets, Knights, Sheriffs, Treaſurer, Treaſurers of our ſaid Army, Mayors, Bailiffs, Conſtables, Captains, and all other Officers, and Soldiers, Miniſters, and all and every our loving Subjects of what Eſtate, Degree, or Condition ſoever, he or they ſhall be, that they, and every of them reſpectively, with their Power, and Servants, from time to time, and according as they ſhall be commanded by you, or authorized, according to the purport and intent of theſe our Letters Patents, and the Authority and Power to you herein given, be obedient to you, and attendant, aiding, aſſiſting, councelling, and helping you, and ready at your Commandment in the due Execution hereof, as they and every of them tender our Diſpleaſure, and will anſwer to the contrary at their Perils. And further, Our Pleaſure is, and we do hereby give, and grant, for Us, our Heirs and Succeſſors, that whatſoever either you, or any other Perſon or Perſons, of what Degree, Office, State, or Condition ſoever, upon, or by your Commiſſion, Warrant, or Command, ſhall by Virtue or Authority of this our Commiſſion, or Letters Pattents, or according to our Inſtructions aforeſaid, or according to the Tenour, Effect, or Purport of this our Commiſſion, touching the execution of the Premiſſes, or any Part thereof, both you, and the ſaid other Perſon or Perſons, upon the ſuing forth of theſe our Letters Patents,

or

or the Conſtat, or the Inrolment thereof, ſhall be in all, and every of our Courts, and elſewhere in our Dominions, diſcharged and acquitted, in that behalf againſt Us, our Heirs, and Succeſſors, and free from all Impeachment, and other Moleſtations for the ſame. In witneſs whereof, We have cauſed theſe our Letters to be made Patents. Witneſs our Self at *Weſtminſter* the Third Day of *Auguſt*, in the Twelfth Year of our Reign.

By the KING. *BARKER.*

To the High and Mighty Monarch CHARLES *the Second; and to the moſt Serene Majeſty of the moſt Royal* CATHERINA, *His moſt Gracious Queen, and Conſort: The Humbleſt of His moſt proſtrately devoted Vaſſals,* Sir John Bowring *Knight, in all ſubmiſſive Humility, preſents this Manuſcript of many moſt occult conſiderable Concerns, and ſecret Tranſactions, relating to Your Glorious Father,* England's *Royal* Proto-Martyr.

BEING preſented to the King's Majeſty at *Oxford*, your Majeſty's Royal Father, in the time of the late War, by the Hands of the Right Honourable the Lord High Chamberlain *Lindſey* that now is, my Lord Keeper *Lane*, my Lord Chief Juſtice *Heath*, and other Judges, by directions of my Lord Keeper *Littleton* before he died, in his Privy Chamber at *Chriſt-Church*, in reſpect I was bred a practicable Clerk at Com-

mon

mon Law in the Inns of Court, by the ableſt Clerks then living, and ſo recommended by the Judges to His Majeſty. The King immediately ſent for Mr. Secretary *Nicholas*, and there gave Mr. Secretary directions for a Civil Employment for me, and a Warrant for me to be ſworn one of the Clerks of the Council extraordinary, in the place of Mr. *Whittacres*, a Parliament Man then at *London*, in reſpect there was no other Employment at preſent, nor Place void, as Mr. Secretary told His Majeſty. But when any other happened, he would remember His Majeſty of me; and the King commanded him to do ſo.

Afterwards I was ſent for by the King out of *Oxford*, and conveyed by my Lord of *Briſtol* in his Coach to *Hamborough*, where were given me in charge, Papers, and other Things, in my Lord of *Lindſey*'s Coach, until all was unhappily diſpers'd by *Naſeby* Fight; yet this Coach and Papers came all ſafely off to the King's Gariſon at *Leiceſter*, until all were unhappily diſpers'd. But theſe were not the Papers that were afterwards put in Print.

Upon this knowledge of me, His Majeſty gave ſpecial Confidence and Truſt to me. His Majeſty being afterwards by the Army at *Holdenby*, and thence brought to *Hampton Court*. Upon his coming to *Sion-Houſe*, to Viſit, and Dine with the Duke of *York*, the Duke of *Glouceſter*, and the Lady *Elizabeth*, and to meet with the Prince *Electour*, where I was waiting in the Gallery to kiſs His Majeſty's Hands in ſome Buſineſs. The Prince *Electour* obſerving His Majeſty to ſpeak ſomewhat privately and kindly to me, told the King, That he knew me, and that I was an Acquaintance of Mr. *Liſles* of the *Iſle of Wight*, who

was

was Chair man of his Revenue, which the Parliament allowed him. The King immediately ſends the *Electour* into the next Room, and takes me aſide into the Gallery; and His Majeſty was pleaſed to ask me, how I came acquainted with Mr. *Liſle* of the *Iſle of Wight?* I told His Majeſty, he had known me of a Child, and came often to Sir *Guy Palmes* at my Father's Houſe, but Sir *Guy Palmes* hated him for his Violence againſt His Majeſty: I know, ſays the King, Sir *Guy Palmes* is an honeſt Man, and your Father both.

The King gave me ſpecial charge to keep my Friendſhip with Mr. *Liſle*; for, ſays His Majeſty, I ſhall in a ſhort time, for ought I know, be in that Man's Power; meaning, [as I underſtood after,] His Majeſties Reſolution was ſuddenly to retire from *Hampton-Court* to the *Iſle of Wight*; and therefore I charge you by all the Duty and Reſpect you have for Me, and upon your Allegiance, that whatſoever you do, you keep your Intereſt and Friendſhip with Mr. *Liſle*; it concerns Me very much, ſays His Majeſty, and you may perchance do me greater Service, and be better able to perform it than any other Friend whatſoever. Be ſecret, and I ſhall ſometimes ſend to you. I promiſed His Majeſty, I would do ſo, ſince His Majeſty had commanded me; though my Father was utterly againſt my Acquaintance with him; and I would ſerve His Majeſty faithfully in all His Commands, with my Life, and be ſecret in it.

So that from that time His Majeſty came firſt to the *Iſle of Wight*, His Majeſty employed me to manage and tranſact His private and particular Affairs, relying upon me in all things principally, of Care and Hazard to Himſelf, and which was

not

not in the power at that time of any other Perſon living to do his Majeſty any good, except they had a ſecret Intereſt with *Liſle*; and this the King underſtood very well, becauſe his Majeſty knew; that *Hammond* received his Orders from *Liſle* in all things, by reaſon *Hammond* was otherwiſe a Stranger to the Iſland.

By this means, I came to the early knowledge of every Deſign that concerned his Majeſty, either by the Parliament, or the Army; and I gave the King a ſecret and timely Account of all Tranſactions and Paſſages, before they came to the Birth, by ſeveral Meſſengers, but chiefly by Dr. *Cade*, becauſe I could beſt truſt my ſelf with him, who conſtantly adventured his Life in carrying the King Intelligence of Affairs from me to his Majeſty's own Ears; and his Majeſty principally made choice of Dr. *Cade* to truſt with his Meſſages and Directions back again to me, what his Majeſty would have me do in his Buſineſs.

I ſent the King word by Doctor *Cade* about the of That I underſtood the Parliament, both Lords and Commons, were about to prepare ſome Bills for their Security, as they called them; to paſs the Royal Aſſent, which they would ſend down ſuddenly to the *Iſle of Wight*, by Commiſſioners of both Houſes, leaving out the Concurrence of the *Scotch* Commiſſioners, a Trick they never uſed ſince the War before in any Addreſs, and then they would further Treat with his Majeſty about a Settlement and Peace.

His Majeſty deſired me by Dr. *Cade*, to ſend his Majeſty word, what my Opinion was concerning thoſe Bills that were about to be ſent, and what I would adviſe his Majeſty to do upon them, and that I would keep my Intereſt with

Mr. *Liſle*, and if I could poſſibly, come down ſecretly to the Commiſſioners.

Hereupon I ſent his Majeſty word by Dr. *Cade*, that my Opinion was, That when both Houſes addreſſed themſelves to his Majeſty, the King might declare, That he had no juſt reaſon to Sign four Bills to the Parliament for their Security, as they pretended; his Majeſty being rather the moſt Suffering Party in a kind of Reſtraint in the *Iſle of Wight*; unleſs they would admit four more on his Part, for his Majeſties Security at the ſame time; and there is no doubt but they will do it.

In lieu of the Bill for the *Militia* for Twenty Years, to be placed in what Hands the Parliament ſhould think fit, which is intitled, *An Act for the Raiſing, Settling, and Maintaining Forces by Sea and by Land, in the Kingdoms of* England, Ireland, *and Dominion of* Wales, *and the Iſles of* Guernſey *and* Jerſey, *and Town of* Berwick *upon* Tweed. I adviſed his Majeſty for his Security, to demand a Bill for the Revenue to be reſtored to the Crown again, and to be placed in his Majeſty's Hands again, and to revive the *Act of Reaſſumption*. This Bill for reſtoring the Revenue, I concluded will ballance the Bill for the *Militia*, if it paſs but for Ten Years only, which the Parliament will accept of for Ten Years, and his Majeſty by no means to conſent to the Bill for any longer time than Ten Years.

The Reaſons for His Majeſty's paſſing that Bill for Ten Years, were theſe:

Firſt, It was no great matter for the King to give the Lords and Commons the *Militia* for Ten Years, he being in reſtraint, which the Lords and

and Commons had got from his Majeſty by open Hoſtility, and were reſolved to keep by Force, ſince his Majeſty can make ſo good an advantage, as to get his Revenue again reſtored into his own Hands by this means, in lieu of it, out of their Fingers; eſpecially, when by this demand of his Royal Aſſent, to ſettle the *Militia* upon the Lords and Commons, it plainly appears to the People, and is acknowledged by them in offering this Bill, that the Right of the *Militia* is in the King alone abſolutely, whilſt the War they raiſed, and all this War they declared to the People, that the Right of the *Militia* is in the Parliament, and not in the King; and that the Legiſlative Power was in the Parliament and People; by which Pretence they reſolved, and ſeduced the People to raiſe a War upon their King and Soveraign, and now at the laſt they come to the King to ſettle the *Militia* upon them for Twenty Years only; clears it, that it is the King's Right by this Act of their own propoſing; and ſo, if it paſs, it will be manifeſt to all Poſterity, that the Blood of the late Wars lyes at the Parliament's Door, and not at the King's. Beſides, if his Majeſty paſs it to the Lords and Commons, as the Act is worded, without the conſent of the Lords Spiritual, the Act is void in it ſelf, and is a ſpurious Act.

If his Majeſty paſs the Bill for the *Militia* into what Hands the Parliament ſhall think fit for Ten Years, that when they have the Royal Aſſent for Ten Years, they will in leſs than Ten Days after, be together in a Quarrel amongſt themſelves about it: For this Bill of the *Militia* was at this time moved in the Houſe by *Cromwell*, and the Officers of the Army they gape for it; it was al-

ways ſo excellent a thing to be the Lords Lieutenants of the Counties, that the Army will never be content to let the two Houſes keep it. Beſides, it was contrary to the Act propoſed; for the Houſes were to place the *Militia* in other Hands, as the Lords and Commons ſhould approve.: That in all probability, the Army would have fallen out with the Houſe about it; ſo that he would be moſt happy that could firſt make a Refuge to the King; and *Cromwell* was engaged at this time to take an opportunity to ſerve his Majeſty, and to reſtore his Majeſty; and it was twenty to one it had been here; for this would have found *Cromwell* work, [if his Majeſty had but winked upon him,] for *Cromwell*'s own Safety, and Ambition to be Great; ſo the Parliament would be glad [as perchance might fall out,] to give your Majeſty the *Militia* again, and thank your Majeſty to take it, to ballance all, and make all at peace.

In lieu of the Bill of the *Militia*, my Opinion was for his Majeſty to demand a Bill, to reſtore and reinveſt him in his Revenue. My Reaſons were theſe:

His Majeſty's Revenue is the chief Regale, the Baſis, and Primities of the Crown; and if his Majeſty could have that Foundation and Springhead well cleared from thoſe Perturbations and black Confuſions the Parliament had put upon it, and his Majeſty peaceably inveſted in it again, his Majeſty would ſhine forth much more ſplendid and glorious; and in all the Branches and Flowers of the Crown, I mean of his Majeſty's Royal Prerogative, will flouriſh again with a full Spring, whoſe Odour and Beauty will vaunt, and Pride it ſelf all over *Europe*, thus watered from the

the Fountain of Wealth and Honour, which, while his Majeſty is deprived of, and thus cheated, his Royal Authority is darkned and blaſted, and every Branch of the Crown inſenſibly withers. Therefore, if they reſtore his Majeſty his Revenue, which by God's Grace, and the King's Right, I hope they will not have power to detain any longer from his Majeſty. If his Majeſty be pleaſed to demand it upon this Opportunity, his Majeſty is thereupon inſenſibly and immediately reſtored to his Regal Authority, and themſelves deprived of the chief Subſiſtence of their Rebellion and War, [for they pay their Army chiefly with his Majeſty's Revenue;] his Majeſty enabled to keep his Open Courts again, the Splendour and Magnificence of which all *Europe* admired, and *France* principally emulated, becauſe in being reſtored to his Revenue, his Majeſty is reſtored of courſe to his Royal Prerogative of his Royal Purveyance, and Compoſitions, and his Majeſty will be able then to gratifie all Occaſions, and all Perſons employed by his Majeſty in any Service; and entertain them with all Courtifies and Honour to Himſelf, and Satisfaction to them at his Majeſty's Court.

Inſtead of the Bill againſt the *Titles of Peerage* his Majeſty created at *Oxford*, ſince the 20th of *May* 1644, being the Day that *Edward* Lord *Littleton*, then Lord Keeper of the Great Seal, went with the Seal to his Majeſty at *Oxford*. His Majeſty did propoſe, that if the Lords and Commons conſent to lay this Bill aſide, and inſtead thereof to paſs an Act for further confirmation of thoſe Honours and Titles of Peerage that were created at *Oxford* ſince the 20th of *May* 1644, his Majeſty in return, will voluntarily and of his ſpecial

Grace, conſent to paſs an Act to ratifie their Broad Seal the Lords and Commons made at *London* without the King's conſent, and paſs an Act of Indempnity and Pardon: His Majeſty may be ſure they will accept of this Propoſition of his Majeſty, inſtead of vacating thoſe Titles of Honour; and ſo their Spite ceaſes.

My Reaſons were theſe:

This *Act of Confirmation of their Broad Seal*, ſhews all Poſterity, that their Seal was nought during the whole War, and all they acted by it; it preſerves your Majeſty's Honours, and Titles of Peerage, amplifies your Majeſty's Great Seal at *Oxford*, and makes all Friends.

For the Bill of the *Adjournment of both Houſes*, your Majeſty will find the Parliament will drop it, if they be pleaſed in the other Three: So that the Three only, *the Militia*, *the Honours*, *and the Indempnity*, are thoſe the Parliament will punctually inſiſt upon. His Majeſty, inſtead of theſe, I hope will ſtand upon an Act for reſtoring his Revenue, his Majeſty's Titles of Peerage; and I am confident his Majeſty is Reinthroned.

His Majeſty very greatly approves of my Opinion, and Reaſons, and ſent me word by Dr. *Cade*, he was reſolved to follow my Advice.

Commiſſioners being choſen, and diſpatched by the Lords and Commons to the *Iſle of Wight* [without the concurrence of the *Scotch* Commiſſioners,] with all ſpeed, to deliver to the King, in the Name of both Houſes, theſe Four Bills, with divers Articles Engroſed, with directions, that if the King conſented to thoſe Bills, they were impowered

powered to acquaint his Majeſty, the Parliament would immediately treat upon thoſe Articles.

In purſuance of the King's Commands, I obtained by the Favour of ſome Friends in the Lords Houſe, and ſome his Majeſty ſent to in my behalf privately, that my Lord of *Denbigh*, and other Commiſſioners, were contented I ſhould wait on them down to the *Iſle of Wight*; and if it ſhould fall out they ſhould have occaſion to Treat with his Majeſty, and they be further intruſted, that then I ſhould be Secretary to the whole Tranſaction of the Treaty.

The Commiſſioners of the Kingdom of *Scotland* finding a new Addreſs made to the King by the Lords and Commons without their concurrence, made all haſte to the *Iſle of Wight* by themſelves to the King. The Commiſſioners of the Lords and Commons poſted after, hoping to get to the King firſt. But the Commiſſioners of *Scotland* were with the King a whole Day before at *Caresbrooke Caſtle*, and before the *Engliſh* Commiſſioners had got to *Newport*, which very much vexed the *Engliſh* Commiſſioners, who no ſooner came to *Newport*, but *Hammond* was there waiting, to congratulate their Arrival.

The *Engliſh* Commiſſioners ſate in Council immediately, and ordered to ſend me away to the King, to give his Majeſty notice of their Arrival, by the Commands of the Lords and Commons, with Four Bills, and ſeveral Articles; and they deſired his Majeſty graciouſly to give them Audience: Which Meſſage was the Buſineſs I chiefly laboured with the Commiſſioners all the way I came down with them from *London*, becauſe I had a great deſire of an Opportunity to ſpeak with the King perſonally, and I knew his Majeſty

had a desire to speak with me. But Colonel *Hammond* being in Presence when the Commissioners ordered to send me to the King, he desired that he might have the Honour, to acquaint the King of their coming, and of the Four Bills, and Articles; and said to the Commissioners, if they would let him secretly inform the King of what nature the Bills were, and take no notice to his Majesty that he did it by the Commissioners permission, but as a Friend of himself, that then he would undertake to get out of the King, what his Majesty intended to do upon the Bills, before they had their Audience; and so they should know before hand, the Fortune of their Business, and Address.

Hammond accordingly made all haste to the *Castle*, to acquaint his Majesty of the Arrival of the *English* Commissioners, and of their Message, and Bills, and what nature they were.

His Majesty within some few Hours, sends Sir *John Barclay*, Colonel *Legg*, and Mr. *John Ashburnham*, to the Commissioners, to shew them some respect from his Majesty, and to let them know from his Majesty, that to morrow morning they should have a Message from him, when his Majesty would give them Audience; and withal, his Majesty commands them more specially, to call on me from his Majesty, and to ask some few Questions [in order to the Four Bills,] of me privately from his Majesty.

Hammond returns to the Commissioners the same Night about seven of the Clock, and gives them Intelligence, that he had taken some Pains with his Majesty, to know his mind. Yet the King was very free to him, and told him, he was willing to sign their Four Bills, or to do better in some

ſome of them than the Parliament expected, provided they would conſent to paſs Three more on his Majeſty's Part for his Security; which was, if his Majeſty ſigned the Bill for Ten Years for the *Militia*, [for that is all the time his Majeſty will conſent to,] his Majeſty will have a Bill to paſs, to reſtore his Majeſty his Revenue, and revive the *Act of Reaſſumption of the Revenues of the Crown.*

That if they would lay aſide their Bill againſt his Majeſty's Honours and Titles of Peerage, created ſince the 20th Day of *May* 1644, and bring in a Bill to paſs in confirmation of thoſe Titles and Honours, his Majeſty will graciouſly, inſtead thereof, paſs an Act to confirm the Parliaments Broad Seal, and paſs an Act beſides to indempnifie their War, that all may be Friends.

This great Grace of the King's in private, between themſelves and *Hammond*, they expreſs'd great Joy for; and that it was more gracious than the Parliament expected: And the Commiſſioners concluded by this, there would be a Conſummation of a Peace; and told *Hammond*, they would immediately write away to both Houſes, to prepare them in it, that this Offer and Grace of his Majeſty might be accepted of, againſt they received the King's Anſwer, and Demands, and the King's Audience to this Effect.

Hammond takes leave of the Commiſſioners, returns to the King again, and acquaints him, That the Commiſſioners were over-joy'd his Majeſty would Sign the Bills with thoſe Variations which they thought fit to be done, and your Majeſty to have your Revenue, and your Titles of Honour, and Peerage paſſed; and have reſolved to ſend to the Houſes, to have your Majeſty's Propoſitions

poſitions to them accepted, and to prepare the Houſes in it againſt your Majeſty propoſes to them, that there may be no impediment nor delay in either of both Houſes.

This ſtartled the King, when he underſtood the Commiſſioners were thus over-joy'd; that his Majeſty took a reſolution to ſpeak with me Perſonally, and diſpute it a little with me before his Majeſty did proceed, for fear there ſhould be ſome miſtake, becauſe the *Engliſh* Commiſſioners were thus over joy'd.

The Commiſſioners ſate in Council; and as they ſaid to Colonel *Hammond*, ſo they prepared Letters, and ſent them away to divers leading Members of the Houſes, to acquaint the reſt with this good Intelligence; deſiring the Members, that ſince it hath pleaſed God to move the Heart of the King to agree to Sign the Bills with ſome Variations, if his Majeſty may have a Bill paſs to have his Revenue reſtored to him, and a Bill to paſs it; to have his Titles of Honour, and Peerage, created ſince the 20th of *May*, 1644.

In lieu whereof, his Majeſty is graciouſly pleaſed to confirm the Parliaments Broad-Seal, made without his Majeſty's conſent, and paſs an *Act of Indempnity* for the War, with deſire that the Members of the Houſes may be ſpoken to, that this may be accepted as ſoon as his Majeſty demands it; and writ in the Letters, that they would make all haſte to ſend his Majeſty's Anſwers and Demands to the Houſes, which would be very ſuddenly; and that it is the Earneſt of both Houſes to both Houſes, that they will anſwer and accept his Majeſty's Demands; and that the Act may paſs this way, to pleaſe his Majeſty, and God that hath inclined and inſpired the King's

King's Heart, bleſs us all with the ſame deſire of Peace. One Letter the Commiſſioners ſent to my Lord *Wharton*, Speaker of the Houſe of Lords; another to *Lenthall*, Speaker to the Houſe of Commons; and one to *Froſt*, Secretary of the Council.

This Letter, with great Circumſtance of what Seal to ſeal it with, the Commiſſioners ſent ſuddenly away at Ten of the Clock the ſame Night they received their Intelligence from *Hammond*, by one who was their Publick Meſſenger; and one other Letter to *Oliver St. John*'s. All theſe Letters were Copies of the firſt Letters, and the ſame words.

Liſle ſpeaks to me to keep *Goodall* their Meſſenger, until he had writ a private Letter to the ſame Effect; but ſomewhat more perſuaſive to incline, and pleaſe the King, and with great Expreſſions to accept of the King's Demands for Three Bills more, to be Signed on his Majeſty's Part, and to be paſſed into Acts, for confirmation of his Majeſty's Titles of Honour at *Oxford*, and for reſtoring to his Majeſty his Revenue, it was but reaſonable, and upon his Majeſty's Grace and Indempnity they ſhould be happy. — *Liſle* ſuperſcribes this Letter privately, to Lieutenant General *Cromwell* at *Hampton-Court*, or at the Houſe of Commons, ſeals it privately himſelf; and gives *Goodall* order to deliver it ſafe to his own Hands, and let no body ſee it, no not me.

This Letter of the Commiſſioners over-joy'd me, to conclude it will be a Peace, and the King's Bills ſigned; but Mr. *Liſle*'s Letter above all to *Cromwell*, was moſt to be taken notice of, which made me confident there would be no Impediment, and the King reſtored ſuddenly.

Next

Next Day, being *Saturday*, his Majeſty ſends word, that he would give them Audience to morrow after Dinner, being *Sunday*, at *Caresbrook Caſtle*. Accordingly the Commiſſioners had Audience, delivered the King the Four Bills in the Name of both Houſes, reading the Titles to the King. Then the Lord *Denbigh* read the Propoſitions, and delivered them ingroſſed in Parchment to the King, acquainting his Majeſty in the Name of both Houſes, That the King would be pleaſed to Sign thoſe Four Bills firſt; and then the Parliament would Treat with the King upon thoſe Articles.

The King anſwered to morrow Morning, in the ſame place they ſhould receive their Anſwer; ſo the Commiſſioners, and all of Us, kiſſed his Majeſty's Hands, and retired.

On *Monday* Morning the Commiſſioners waited at *Caresbrook Caſtle* for their Anſwer; which they expected ſhould be according to the Intelligence they received from *Hammond*.

When the Commiſſioners came into the King's Preſence, his Majeſty holding a Paper in his Hand, ſpake very graciouſly to the Commiſſioners, and excuſes his Delivery to them, his Anſwer ſealed up. But the Commiſſioners looked one upon another ſomewhat amazed, and whiſpered a little together, and refuſed to take it ſealed. His Majeſty bids them go into a Room cloſe by, and conſider. The Commiſſioners go aſide, and conſider, and return to the King again, and declared, they would not take his Majeſty's Anſwer ſealed up. His Majeſty, with ſome little jocular Arguments, asketh my Lord of *Denbigh*, If he had power to be Judge of his Anſwer, or to Treat with him?

The Commiſſioners made Anſwer, No.

Then

Then ſaid his Majeſty, I wonder at you, that you ſhould deny to take my Anſwer ſealed up, ſince you have no more power than common Poſts. The Commiſſioners made their Obeyſance, and went out of the King's Preſence; yet immediately, upon better Thoughts, they returned to the King, for fear leaſt if the Paper ſealed, which was all the while in his Majeſty's Hands, ſhould be his Majeſty's Conceſſions to the Bills, and they ſhould unhappily refuſe to take them, becauſe his Majeſty's Paper was ſealed up, the Houſes of Parliament might perchance be diſpleaſed with them; for they were bound to take his Majeſty's Conceſſions. So the Commiſſioners went back to the King; but before they could ſpeak to the King, his Majeſty as ſoon as he ſees them again, breaks open his Anſwer, and reads it to them, and ſo delivered it to the Commiſſioners. They took it, read it, and asked his Majeſty, If this were all his Majeſty's Anſwer to the Bills? Yes, ſaid the King, at the preſent this is all. So they made their Obeyſance, and took their leave.

I omitted by chance, may it pleaſe your Majeſty, to write in the Leaf before, your Majeſty's Royal Father's Reaſons, when his Majeſty excuſed himſelf in delivering his Anſwer ſealed up, which were according to my Notes in theſe words:

My Lords and Gentlemen, I look upon you all with as Honourable Eſteem as upon any other Commiſſioners that have been ever ſent to me from my Two Houſes, either to Uxbridge *or any other Place; and I muſt confeſs, it was always my cuſtom to deliver my Papers, of what Importance ſoever, to the Commiſſioners open and unſealed.*

But,

But, to my great abuſe and grief, I found at length, that moſt, or ſome of them, ſent Copies of my Papers always to ſeveral Members of both Houſes, and ſo prevented my ſenſe, and ſo put what conſtruction they pleaſed upon it; that when my Anſwers and Papers came to be openly read in the Houſes, moſt of the Leading Members were poſſeſs'd before-hand, and had laid and deſigned my Buſineſs according to their ſeveral Intereſſes, and were ready prepared with Speeches againſt me for their ſeveral Purpoſes; that the true genuine Senſe of my Papers were always blaſted, and never rightly underſtood, and ſo moſt times became unfortunate. Now therefore, being at a greater diſtance of Miles from my Two Houſes here in the Iſle of Wight, *than I have moſt times been, when I received your Meſſages in many other Places heretofore; I thought it good to take more care that this Prejudice might be prevented for the future; and have reaſon to hope, my Anſwers and Meſſages, though at this diſtance, might take better effect with my Two Houſes than they have formerly. Wherefore I delivered this to You for my Two Houſes of Parliament ſealed up, and it is not of any diſreſpect to your Perſons.*

The Commiſſioners being come away with his Majeſty's Anſwer, and from his Majeſty opened, conſidered upon it at *Newport*, and found his Majeſty's Mind was altered from what they had Intelligence from *Hammond*, in order to the paſſing the Four Bills with ſome Variations. They believed therefore his Majeſty had ſome thoughts to get away, and peradventure was perſuaded by the *Scotch* Commiſſioners to do ſo, and had made ſome Agreement with the *Scots*, which they concluded

cluded the more abſolutely, becauſe his Majeſty Knighted Sir *John Chiſlett*, the *Scotch* Commiſſioners Secretary, upon their taking leave of the King.

Upon which, I underſtood by *Liſle*, one of the *Engliſh* Commiſſioners, that they were reſolved for the preſent, to ſecure his Majeſty's Perſon in the Caſtle, and to know the Parliaments further Pleaſure, and to ſend away Sir *John Barclay*, Colonel *Legg*, and Mr. *Aſhburnham*, the next Day. But my Lord of *Denbigh* would by no means conſent to impriſon the King, and therefore proteſted againſt it.

Whereupon I ſent one early in the Morning to the Caſtle, and Dr. *Cade* to the King, to give his Majeſty Intelligence of their Intention to impriſon his Majeſty's Perſon, and to ſend away Sir *John Barclay*, Colonel *Legg*, and Mr. *Aſhburnham*, the next Day, with intention his Majeſty might do what was moſt prudential towards his Preſervation. But his Majeſty ſent me word, he deſired to ſpeak with me my ſelf, by any means, and I muſt adventure to come to him: I waited on him early the ſame Morning, within an hour, in the Caſtle, where his Majeſty was pleaſed to declare to me, That if he could have ſpoken with my ſelf before he had delivered his Paper, and Anſwer to the Commiſſioners, he would then have ſigned the Bills with thoſe Variations, which I ſent him word of by Dr. *Cade*, demanding Three more for himſelf of his Majeſty's own Part for his Revenue; but finding the Commiſſioners over-joy'd, [for otherwiſe, ſaid his Majeſty, he found my Advice moſt prudent,] his Majeſty thought the Advice I ſent him by Dr. *Cade*, might poſſibly be a little miſtaken in the Doctor's Delivery

livery from me. Yet ſince he had now anſwered to their Meſſage, and that conſider of it for Ten Days, which was only to get an opportunity and time to ſpeak with me Perſonally, he would do no more in it till the Ten Days were expired. But after Ten Days, his Majeſty declared to me, that he was reſolved he would ſign the Bills with thoſe Variations and Demands on his Majeſty's own Part, as I had adviſed his Majeſty in my Meſſage by Dr. *Cade*, before the Bills came down from the Paliament by the Commiſſioners.

I perſuaded his Majeſty all that I could to recall that Paper, for fear of the worſt, and to ſign the Bills with thoſe Variations and Demands; which I aſſured the King, and I ſhewed his Majeſty the Reaſons for it, would take effect. And I told his Majeſty, I underſtood my Lord of *Denbigh* would upon his own account, wait privately to perſuade his Majeſty to ſign the Bills; and then, if his Majeſty pleaſed, he might do it, and take that Opportunity. My Lord *Denbigh*, I knew it, would by no means conſent to the impriſoning his Majeſty, as he was paſſionately againſt it: I acquainted his Majeſty, as I am ready to give your Majeſty an Account, and in a Particular worthy your Majeſty's hearing, craving your Majeſty's Pardon for this Preſumption, to give your Majeſty the trouble in hearing it.

But ſays his Majeſty, if they will not be ſatisfied with my Anſwer for Ten Days, but impriſon my Perſon upon Pretences, and Fears, that I delay only for an Opportunity to get away; now you know my Reaſons, then I muſt ſuffer.

After

After many other Diſcourſes, his Majeſty acquainted me, That the Commiſſioners for *Scotland* had fairly taken their leaves of him; and that in proper time his Majeſty would be as kind to me, and Civil, as his Majeſty had ſhewed himſelf to their Secretary, if his Majeſty did not excel it; for his Majeſty was pleaſed to ſay, that he looked upon me as his greater Friend.

But, ſays his Majeſty to me, if this unfortunately happens to me, go you into *Scotland*, and reſide there, and be curious of my Intereſt and Affairs; and upon all occaſions ſend to my Son *Charles* the Prince, who is now in *Holland*, of every Tranſaction that may concern Him, and his Safety, in which my own at this time is moſt principally concerned; and his Majeſty would give the Prince [now your Majeſty] then in *Holland*,] notice of me; and ſaid, That he had acquainted my Lord *Lannerick* of me already, who is now his Majeſty's Secretary of State in *Scotland*, and had ſhewed me to him in the Caſtle one time when I was to wait on his Majeſty, and that my Lord *Lannerick* knew my Perſon; yet charged me, that whatſoever I did, I ſhould keep ſecret, and never acquaint my Lord *Lannerick*, nor any other Perſon, of any Meſſage or Buſineſs I ſhould ſend to your Meſſage into *Holland*. And further ſaid, That he had given my Lord *Lannerick* command, that he ſhould in all occaſions that concerned his Majeſty and his Affairs, adviſe with me, and do nothing without me. My Lord *Lannerick* did ſo, held a conſtant correſpondence with me, both in raiſing the Army under Duke *Hamilton*, and all other Tranſactions in the Parliament of *Scotland*, that might concern the King's Affairs at that time, and adviſed with me

Majesty

in all occaſions according to his Majeſty's Inſtructions; and Ciphers ſent down after him, with directions to ſhew them to me: And I found him always a very punctual Perſon to the King's Commands, and ſo faithful, that I durſt truſt my ſelf with him.

Accordingly, after I was in *Scotland* by two Months, with great Expences by Intelligence: There I found it neceſſary to ſend your Majeſty word [then the Prince of *Wales* in *Holland*,] by Sir *Thomas Glenham*, That for ſome private material Reaſons, I thought it not ſafe for the Prince, [now your Majeſty,] nor no other of your Royal Family, by any means, to come into *Scotland*, and to put your ſelf into the Head of Duke *Hamilton*'s unfortunate Army. But withal, I beſought Sir *Thomas Glenham* [who aſſured me, he lay at *Edinborough* for this purpoſe to ſpeak with me, and with directions to be ruled by me,] to make what haſte he poſſibly could with this Meſſage to your Majeſty, [then the Prince of *Wales*,] and that he would not inquire into my Reaſons.

Sir *Thomas Glenham* told me, Sir, if you think it fit and ſafe for the Prince to come into *Scotland*, my Directions are then to ſend for him; but if you think it not fit he ſhould come over, then I am to go into *Holland*, as I muſt pretend, to fetch his Highneſs my ſelf into *Scotland*, and ſo prevent his Highneſs from coming. Theſe are my Inſtructions; and I am not to inquire into your Reaſons.

After this Meſſage by Sir *Thomas Glenham* to your Majeſty then in *Holland*, by which, as was moſt evident by the Misfortune of Duke *Hamilton*'s Army, I was inſtrumental to the preſervation of

of your Majeſty's Perſon in ſafety. At that time, it being frequently lamented by thoſe Rogues under *Cromwell* after their Victory, that they had not the Fortune to have taken your Majeſty, [whom God ever preſerve] in Duke *Hamilton*'s Army, as was expected.

Immediately I took Ship in half an Hour for Security of my ſelf; for one could not tell for certain whom to Truſt, becauſe, if Sir *Thomas Glenham* ſhould have diſcovered this Meſſage to any Perſon in *Scotland*, that was concerned in Duke *Hamilton*'s Army, out of Piety to them, as a Friend, or for Honour, as a Gentleman, then I had been ſeized on, and perchance put to Death for preventing the Prince of *Wales* [now your Majeſty,] from coming over, who was expected every Hour to be in the Head of the Army with Duke *Hamilton*, and nothing more deſired amongſt them; or at the leaſt, I had been impriſoned to know my Opinion, and queſtioned to know my Reaſons; and ſo I had been undone, both by the *Scotch* and the *Engliſh*.

And this was not to be done at a ſmall Charge and Expence, where I kept and maintained a Perſon who was faithful, and uſed to be in the *Iſle of Wight* with me, ready upon all Occaſions; if I had not found Sir *Thomas Glenham* lying at *Edenburgh*, ready upon all occaſions, purpoſely to go, or ſend into *Holland* to your Majeſty [then the Prince] from me, as I found occaſion for your Majeſty's Safety, beſide the perpetual Hazard of my Life both with the *Scotch* and the *Engliſh*.

And upon which, being brought the firſt *Whitſunday* Morning after your happy Reſtauration, by your Majeſty's Command, to your Majeſty's

Cloſet in *Whitehall*, by Mr. Secretary *Nicholas*, to give your Majeſty an account of ſome Particulars, your Majeſty was pleaſed to tell me, You remembred that Sir *Thomas Glenham* did bring this Meſſage over into *Holland* to your Majeſty from me, wherein your Majeſty was graciouſly pleaſed to give me great Encouragement of your Majeſty's Favour, and for my Services to your Majeſty's Royal Father and your Sacred Perſon. Your Majeſty was pleaſed to expreſs, That your Majeſty would be the ſame Friend to me, as your Royal Father intended to be to me; and bid me aſſure my ſelf, and be very well aſſured, That I ſhould find your Majeſty civil to me in whatſoever I ſhould deſire of your Majeſty. At which time, your Majeſty was graciouſly pleaſed to ask me, If I had any thing to move your Majeſty in at preſent for my ſelf? I anſwered, at preſent I had not; but beſought your Majeſty for the future Favour, that I might throw my ſelf at your Majeſty's Feet, when your Royal Affairs were more ſetled; and your Majeſty was pleaſed to command me graciouſly to be often in your Majeſty's Eye, and ſaid, You would ſometimes call me to your Majeſty, and that your Majeſty would take a further opportunity to ſpeak with me in your Royal Father's Tranſactions more fully; for then your Majeſty's time was ſpent, my Lord Chamberlain coming to wait on you in ſome other Affairs.

I returned into *England* from *Edinburgh* by Sea, with all ſpeed, aſſoon as I had delivered my mind to Sir *Thomas Glenham*, for your Majeſty then in *Holland*; and made all haſte into *England*, of intention to wait on your Majeſty's Royal Father in the *Iſle of Wight*, then a Priſoner in *Cares-*

Caresbrook Caſtle, to give his Majeſty an account of this Particular in chief, and of other Things, that his Majeſty might not expect, nor take it ill from the Prince of *Wales*, [now your Majeſty,] that you were not marched in the Head of Duke *Hamilton*'s Army into *England*, as his Majeſty expected for his Relief, nor that any diſhonour might happen to your Majeſty by it, and to ſhew his Majeſty the Reaſon for it; and that I ſent to your Majeſty by Sir *Thomas Glenham* Perſonally into *Holland*, to prevent your Majeſty's coming over to Duke *Hamilton*'s Army, as your Majeſty's Royal Father commanded me, if I ſaw occaſion. But that his Buſineſs muſt be done ſome other way; there being no hopes of Duke *Hamilton*'s Army for his Relief in *Caresbrook Caſtle*, as his Majeſty relyed upon, and expected.

But yet I very well knew how difficult it was, and how hard to be done, to get to ſpeak one word, or to ſee his Majeſty in *Caresbrook Caſtle*; though by me, that well underſtood, and was favoured by Colonel *Hammond* for *Liſle*'s ſake, under whoſe Intereſt I had a freedom in the Iſland, and to come to the Caſtle too, with *Hammond*'s leave, and without ſuſpicion.

And I knew, as there was the greateſt neceſſity ſpeedily to ſpeak with the King, both to preſerve his Majeſty's Perſon, becauſe of the Miſcarriage of Duke *Hamilton*'s Army, which would ſhortly happen by *Cromwell*'s Victory, and the difficulty I ſhould find to come to ſpeak to his Majeſty; and if I did, that would not do his Buſineſs. I thought I muſt therefore turn my ſelf nimbly about, or he would ſuddenly be loſt as ſoon as *Cromwell* returned to *London*. And therefore I

concluded to make my way ſuddenly to his Majeſty, and by ſome means that might give his Majeſty liberty, by Policy, to ſave himſelf, ſince the Army out of *Scotland*, under Duke *Hamilton*'s Command, which his Majeſty relied upon for his Relief, would ſuddenly be loſt. And this muſt be done with all ſpeed, before his Majeſty ſhould come to know of the loſs of Duke *Hamilton*'s Army, to keep up the King's Heart.

Hereupon I conſidered when I returned out of *Scotland*, immediately in the ſame hour, I ſent away Sir *Thomas Glenham*, coming to take my leave of Mr. *Robert Goodwin*, one of the Commiſſioners for *England*, reſiding there for the pretended Parliament, who were afraid to return into *England*, becauſe of Duke *Hamilton*'s Army now upon the march, and could ſend no Letters to the Parliament of any account, but were intercepted by the Duke's Army, took the opportunity to write a Letter of Credence by me to ſome Members of the Houſe, and writ in the Letter, That becauſe they had no ſafety or opportunity to write Letters of Buſineſs, by reaſon of the danger of the Army, they referred the Parliament to me, to underſtand the State of Affairs, as things then ſtood in *Scotland* in reference to *England*; and ſays the Letter, This Gentleman can give you an account of all Things as well as if we writ, or were with you our ſelves to do it.

Which Letter gave me great Reputation with the Parliament, that gaped for News out of *Scotland*; ſo that I was formally examined by Mr. *Liſle*, and Mr. *Love*, to whom Mr. *Goodwyn* directed his Letter, and ſigned it by the command of the other Commiſſioners, and to divers other Mem-

Members, moſt Presbyterians, how Things and Affairs ſtood in *Scotland.*

I took little notice that I knew the inſide of the Letter that I brought; ſo I told them, I knew very little News: I underſtood no Buſineſs but only this, That Duke *Hamilton*'s Army was marched for *England* before I came away; and as ſome of us underſtood privately, that he would be beaten by *Cromwell*; and ſo it was deſigned. Is this all you tell us that is material? Yes, ſaid I. Whereupon they whiſpered together, and ſaid, There was little notice to be taken of what I ſaid, for it was impoſſible: And ſo theſe Gentlemen, very angry, returned into the Houſe. By which, I underſtood, my Buſineſs was more than half done already.

Whereupon, one of the Members ſpake to me, and ſays, Sir, we thank you for your Letters; but for what you tell us, if that be all, we are to tell you, it is impoſſible for *Cromwell* to conquer Duke *Hamilton*'s Army, but who the Parliament appoints; and they will appoint no Commiſſion to any, but to their General *Fairfax*. Beſides, *Cromwell*, who is now under *Fairfax*'s Command, is now at the Siege of *Pembroke Caſtle* in *Wales*, and hath been there theſe two Months, but with Fifteen hundred Men all, worn out; ſo having no Army with him, or Orders from the Parliament, he cannot fight Duke *Hamilton*; therefore you muſt needs be miſtaken in this Buſineſs, ſays the Parliament Men to me. So I returned to my Lodgings.

Within Three Days after this Examination, which was generally told by me to the Lords and Commons, *Cromwell* writes a Letter to the Houſe of Commons, and ſays:

Finding the great Enemy of Scotland, *under the Command of Duke* Hamilton, *had invaded* England, *and was marched on this ſide* Twede, *towards* Newcaſtle, *with a vaſt and formidable Army, he thought it his Duty to raiſe his Siege at* Pembrooke Caſtle, *and was now fallen down into* Cheſhire, *into the Head of ſuch and ſuch Regiments which were in all Five thouſand, and was now marched towards* York *with them, to join with* Lambert, *which had Six thouſand more, and deſired the Parliament to haſten the General after him with all ſpeed; but however, with that handful he hoped, and they ſhould ſee by God's Providence, he would render them a ſudden and victorious Account of Duke* Hamilton's *Army.*

This Letter exceedingly ſtartled all the *Preſbiterians*; for the *Independents* were yet an occult Intereſs, that had not yet ſhewed themſelves, and ſided altogether with all Foreign Solicitations againſt the King and both Houſes, upon all opportunities to betray the Monarchical Government, and skulked, and lay masked under the *Presbiterians*, and amongſt them in the Houſe, being moſt of them Stipendaries to Foreign Princes, till it was their time, and that *Cromwell* grew victorious. So that upon this Letter of *Cromwell*'s, the *Presbiterians* being exceedingly vexed that *Cromwell* ſhould be at the Head of Eleven thouſand Men in Arms, Horſe and Foot, that juſt now before had only Fifteen hundred tired Soldiers beſieging *Pembroke Caſtle*, and was marched without Orders to fight Duke *Hamilton*, either from Them or the General, and write them word he did not doubt of Succeſs.

They

They bethought themſelves; and immediately ſome Members ſent for me, to come to them at the *Lobby* of the Commons Door, where one Mr. *Thomas Gell* ſpake to me this time, [there being a great many Members with him,] and ſaid, Sir, We remember the other Day, upon your coming out of *Scotland*, you told us, That all you could let us underſtand out of *Scotland* that was conſiderable, that *Cromwell* was to fight, and beat Duke *Hamilton*'s Army. We anſwered you again, It was impoſſible, becauſe the Parliament would not give *Cromwell* any Commiſſion to fight Duke *Hamilton*, or any Army: But to Day he hath ſent us a Letter, which is this; ſo it was read to me, which was the Letter expreſs'd juſt before in this Paper.

Now Sir, we have juſt Reaſon to take notice of your Words, and we are informed that you are a Gentleman which underſtands the Intereſt of both Kingdoms, and how thoſe Intereſſes ſtand betwixt the King and Us, and in all Points beſides, more than we are willing to ſpeak, and therefore of ſome Intereſſes you have with the King. Therefore having great Reaſon to take notice of your Words about Duke *Hamilton*'s Army, we muſt deſire you to tell Us what you think will be the Event of Things by *Cromwell*'s Victory, if it pleaſe God it muſt be ſo, and then what you think is the beſt way for Us to take, in order to the good of the Kingdoms, and of us all.

I ſaid, This is a very hard Point for me to anſwer; but however, I will tell you my Opinion. If *Cromwell* beats Duke *Hamilton*'s Army, as no doubt he will, I believe he will return to *London* with

with all ſpeed, purge the Houſe as they call it, and thereby ſet up his own Party.

What do you mean by his own Party, ſays ſome of them to me? I underſtand the *Independants*, that are now a ſecret Party cloſe in the Houſe, to be his Creatures.

Well, what do you think is beſt to be done, and for the Parliament now to do, as things ſtand, to take in hand, in order to the good of the Kingdoms, and of us all.

Sir, my Opinion is this: The beſt and moſt prudential way you can take, as things now ſtand, and the ſafeſt is, for the Parliament to take off the Votes of Non-Addreſſes, and fetch his Majeſty the King out of the *Iſle of Wight*, and ſettle him ſpeedily in his Throne here at *Weſtminſter*, which will prevent *Cromwell* upon preſuming any Deſign with his Victorious Army; or you may eaſily maſter him, when you ſhall ſee at the ſame inſtant the Three Eſtates united, the King enthroned, and all in Peace. By this means you will maſter him, and his bloody Army, and no otherwiſe. But if the Parliament do not this out of hand, I fear he will ruin all.

The Members made no anſwer, but returned into the Houſe: After they had talked a while together, and that Afternoon, being *Friday* the 28th Day of *July* 1648, they voted a Treaty to be had by the Lords and Commons in the *Iſle of Wight*, where the King ſhould appoint, upon the Articles preſented to his Majeſty at *Hampton Court*, with Freedom, Honour, and Safety.

The *Independents* finding themſelves ſurprized with this Treaty, came flocking to fill the Houſe, and to obſtruct Proceedings.

As

As ſoon as this Vote had paſſed, I conſidered, it was moſt neceſſary, that before *Hammond* ſhould have any notice of theſe Votes from the Parliament, to acquaint his Majeſty firſt. His Majeſty might have denied to have Treated in the *Iſle of Wight*, becauſe the Parliament Houſe had impriſoned the King in *Caresbrooke Caſtle*, and the rather, becauſe his Majeſty would peradventure take this Opportunity to get nearer to *London*: Which would have given ground in the Houſes, to reaſſume the Votes for a Treaty upon a new Debate, and then in all likelihood, it would have been damn'd again; becauſe the *Independents*, who were before ſurprized with this Vote for a Treaty, it was of ſuch a ſudden, and moſt of them out of the Houſe, but now watched every Moment, and Day, and had made a full Houſe to bring the Treaty again to nothing upon all Opportunities.

To prevent this Accident in the King, and becauſe the rather I thought it would be moſt convenient for me to ſpeak with his Majeſty, to conſider of what was more to be done further of this Buſineſs of the Treaty for the King's convenience: As ſoon as ever the Votes had paſſed, that Night I went with all ſpeed to the *Iſle of Wight*, and came to *Caresbrooke Caſtle* to ſee Coll. *Hammond* on *Sunday* Morning before Nine of the Clock; the Treaty having paſs'd but on *Friday* before Coll. *Hammond* treated me civilly, and deſired me to Dine with him. Yet there paſſed never a word from me to *Hammond* of this Treaty, or did I ask *Hammond* ever a word how the King did.

But after *Hammond* had Dined, he made all haſte, as his cuſtom was, to wait on the King at Dinner:

Dinner: So he desired me to stay till the King had Dined, because he would send a Letter by me to Mr. *Lisle*; and so *Hammond* puts me in the King's Presence, and went back again to call for the King's Dinner; where the King sitting upon the Form, I Addressed my self, and kissed his Majesty's Hand, so that in that instant I said, Sir, the Parliament have voted a Treaty with your Majesty in the *Isle of Wight*; if your Majesty do not accept of it here in the *Isle of Wight*, I fear the Vote will be reassumed, and come to nothing. The King pinched my Hand, as I kissed his; by which, I understood the King knew what I said.

Mildmay was at the other end of the room by the Table; he drew towards me, and salutes me kindly. I told him, I wondered much there were no more Gentlemen here while his Majesty was at Dinner. I turned to Coll. *Hammond*, and said, Sir, I wonder to see no more Gentlemen here, now the King was at Dinner, and at Liberty. Says *Hammond*, there is no body to come within the Castle to see the King; I thought you were not ignorant of that. No Sir, said I, not when his Majesty was a Prisoner: But now the Parliament have voted a Treaty with the King in the *Isle of Wight*, every body may wait on his Majesty at pleasure.

I never heard of this: When passed this Vote for a Treaty, says *Hammond?* On *Friday*, I answered. Is the Vote of Non-Addresses taken off, says *Hammond?* I answered, I could not well tell; yet I knew it was not. The Parliament, I said, think they have done enough already to vote a Treaty in what place his Majesty shall approve within the Isle, with Freedom, Honour, and Safety; implies his Majesty's Liberty, and Honour,

Honour, and all his Subjects to come and wait on his Majesty at pleasure.

But yet I advised *Hammond* to write a word to Mr. *Lisle*, and to other particular Members, to have the Votes of Non-Addresses taken off, for *Hammond*'s own sake; and the King had best write too; you may speak to his Majesty, I said: Yes, so I will, says *Hammond*; for the taking off the Votes of Non-Addresses will be chiefly my Authority, to let his Majesty be at liberty in the Castle, and People to come to him: I will write to Mr. *Lisle* about it by you, and to some other Friends. But yet I see this Vote sets the King at liberty: Yes, that it does, said I, to his Masty, as may be expected, but only for your own Authority.

May I adventure to tell his Majesty of this Vote for a Treaty, says *Hammond* to me? Yes, I warrant you, said I, Sir. And please your Majesty, Here is a Gentleman newly come from *London*, which tells me News that I am glad to hear of. He says, The Parliament have newly voted a Personal Treaty with your Majesty in the Island, where your Majesty will appoint, with Freedom, Honour, and Safety.

Pray did you not hear of this before, Colonel *Hammond*, says the King? He answered, No. Pray Sir, What are the Votes, says his Majesty to me? I told his Majesty word for word what they were. Well, says his Majesty to me; and Sir, said I, they will allow your Majesty Councel too, if your Majesty please to demand it; that I shall do, says his Majesty.

Immediately before the King had dined, came a Post with private Letters, and the Votes to Colonel *Hammond*, from some Members of the House:

Houſe: *Hammond* read them to the King. Well, ſays the King, I ſhall accept of this Treaty here in the *Iſle of Wight*. Says his Majeſty, Is there no direction in your Letters, to acquaint me with the Votes? Yes Sir, ſays *Hammond*, but that is all: Sure, ſays the King, I ſhall hear particularly from the Lords and Commons of this Treaty. I have a mind [Do you write back by this Meſſenger? Yes Sir.] to write back by your Meſſenger for Councel: Well, I will ſtay till I hear further from my Two Houſes. The King turns to Colonel *Hammond*, and ſays, Do you obey this Vote Sir: With all my Heart. Then I hope, ſays his Majeſty, I am now no Priſoner, but that I may go where I pleaſe in the Iſland. Yes, and pleaſe your Majeſty, ſays Colonel *Hammond*. Then ſays his Majeſty, I will ride to *Newport* this Afternoon, to make choice of my Houſe; and *Newport* ſhall be my place: But firſt I will walk forth upon the Bowling-Green, ſays his Majeſty. *Hammond* ſends the Gentlemen to Dinner, and tells Mr. *Mildmay* and other Gentlemen, that I had Dined already.

After the Gentlemen were gone, *Hammond* perſuades the King to write to both Houſes to take off the Votes of Non-Addreſſes. Says *Hammond*, this Gentleman will tell your Majeſty, it is the beſt way for your Majeſty and me. So *Hammond* leaves me by my ſelf, with the King in the Preſence, and tells me in his Majeſty's hearing, he will go and write a Letter for me, and wait on me preſently.

As ſoon as *Hammond* was gone, the King thanks me for my great care for him, which he would never forget while he lived, and reward me for it highly in whatſoever I ſhould deſire of his

his Majeſty; either for my Self, or any other Friend. I thought, ſays his Majeſty, you had good News for me by your cheerful Countenance. And pleaſe Your Majeſty, I ſaid never a word to *Hammond* of any Treaty, or other Buſineſs, before he brought me into Your Majeſties Preſence. Says his Majeſty, I have had a ſad time of it ever ſince the Two Houſes impriſoned me in this Caſtle expecting every hour when I ſhould have been murthered; but You have relieved my Heart now. What more News have you?

Sir, I came out of *Scotland* about Fourteen Days ſince; at which time, Duke *Hamilton*'s Army was marched on this ſide *Berwick* before I came from *Edenburgh*; and ſo I told the King how things ſtood in *Scotland*, and of Your Majeſties being in *Holland* ſtill, becauſe Duke *Hamilton*'s Army would be unfortunate; and that very near this time, Duke *Hamilton*'s Army would be engaged with *Cromwell*; and that I ſent Sir *Thomas Glenham* to the Prince [now Your Majeſty,] into *Holland*, to prevent Your Majeſty's coming over into Duke *Hamilton*'s unfortunate Army, or that elſe Your Majeſty had been in the Head of Duke *Hamilton*'s Army, to have relieved his Majeſty out of Priſon.

The King was exceeding glad of this good Fortune in the Prince's [now Your Majeſty's] Preſervation; for, ſays his Majeſty, it might otherwiſe have proved a bad Buſineſs, as things might have happened. I acquainted the King partly how things came about, and how the Treaty came to be voted.

The King admired the Houſes ſent no body to him, to let his Majeſty know of this Treaty: Do you think they will not? Yes, and pleaſe Your

Your Majeſty, I believe they will very ſuddenly. Make what haſte you can to *London*, and let ſome of the Parliament know, whom you know are your Friends, that you have ſpoken with me, and that I deſire to have this Vote ſent me down ſpeedily by ſome Members; and acquaint your Friends of my other Deſires, to have the Non-Addreſſes taken off, and Councel allowed me; and when they ſend down to me, then I will write for Councel, and Servants. Do you think *Hammond* will write for thoſe Votes of Non-Addreſſes to be taken off? Sir, *Hammond* told me, he would write by me to Mr. *Liſle*, and ſome other Members, to have them taken off; and deſired me to perſuade what Members I could of both Houſes; for *Hammond* was poſſeſs'd, nothing is more for his own Advantage than the taking off theſe Votes, and I have told him ſo all along, may it pleaſe Your Majeſty: So that *Hammond* will, for his Advantage and Authority, prevail with the *Independents* in the Houſe; and I am ſure, the *Presbyterians* are as willing already for their own Preſervation, as Your Majeſty can deſire, to Treat, and make Peace with Your Majeſty. For they will otherwiſe be ſwallowed by *Cromwell*; and therefore there is no queſtion, but the Non-Addreſſes will be repealed.

Make haſte to *London*, ſays the King to me, and let Commiſſioners be ſent me down from both Houſes, to acquaint me of the Treaty. I will appoint *Newport* to be the place. See the Non-Addreſſes taken off: I will write to both Houſes for that purpoſe, and for Councel. Underſtand what you can of the private Inſtructions given to the Commiſſioners that are to Treat with me; and do you all you can that is neceſſary for

for me; and make all haſte to me to *Newport*. I will watch your coming down to *Newport*; for I will do nothing in my Treaty till you come to me: I ſhall have great buſineſs with you.

Hammond returns into Preſence, with his Letters to Mr. *Liſle*, and other Members, and gives them me before his Majeſty, and ſays in the King's hearing, I have writ to Mr. *Liſle*, to prevail with the Two Houſes to take off the Votes of Non-Addreſſes, for my Authority. Have you ſpoke to the King to write? Says the King, I will write to the Parliament to take off the Votes of Non-Addreſſes, that I may not go lamely about my Treaty, and that I may Treat with Honour. I will write as ſoon as any body comes to me, to give notice from my Two Houſes of the Treaty. I ſhall not write by this Gentleman: Would you have me? As Your Majeſty pleaſes, ſays *Hammond*; the ſooner the better, he will deliver Your Majeſties Letter ſafe. Says the King, It will ask me a little time, [and ſo the King nodded upon me,] and this Gentleman I know muſt go preſently.

Immediately I returned to *London* with *Hammond*'s Letters to *Liſle*, and others; and by *Monday* Night the 31ſt of *July*, I acquainted ſome Friends of the Houſe with the King's Deſires, to have the Votes of Non-Addreſſes taken off, and to have Councel to prepare them againſt the King ſhould write for Councel, and that his Majeſty expected ſome Members of both Houſes before now, to be ſent from the Parliament to acquaint his Majeſty from the Lords and Commons of the Votes and Treaty.

On *Wedneſday* Morning, the 2d of *Auguſt*, the Lords and Commons voted Commiſſioners from both Houſes, to acquaint the King at *Careſbrook Caſtle* in the *Iſle of Wight*, of the Perſonal Treaty.

Upon the Commiſſioners acquainting the King of the Treaty, the King writes to the Parliament the 10th of *Auguſt* for Councel, and to take off the Votes of Non-Addreſſes, and if poſſible he might Treat nearer to *London*. As ſoon as the Parliament had taken off the Votes of Non-Addreſſes, *Jovis* 24th of *Auguſt* 1648, they voted his Majeſties Councel, and Letters to be ſent from both Houſes, to ſignifie to the King to that purpoſe.

The Commiſſioners of the Lords and Commons choſen to Treat with his Majeſty, which the *Independents* took ſpecial care ſhould be mixed with as many of their Intereſt, as they could crowd in, to choak the Treaty in its growth by Delays, till *Cromwell* returns with the Army from *Edenburgh* in *Scotland*; which was all the Trick the *Independents* had left them now, ſince they were not able to ſtifle it in the Birth, and the Commiſſioners fully inſtructed, and the limited Forty Days.

I then returned from *London* to his Majeſty in the *Iſle of Wight*, as ſoon as the Parliament had ſent away the King's Councel, to give his Majeſty an Account of Tranſactions at large, and what was beſt to be done, and ſafeſt for his Majeſties Welfare in this juncture of Affairs.

Upon my coming to *Newport* Town, Doctor *Cade* was watching for me by the King's Command, becauſe he knew me, who brought me to Sir *Edward Walker*, to whom I was a Stranger; and

and Sir *Edward* immediately brought me up by command to the King's Cloſſet: The Cloſſet-door being open, with a ſmiling Countenance receives me, where, after I had the Honour to kiſs his Majeſties Hand, his Majeſty was pleaſed to ſay, commanding Sir *Edward Walker* to ſhut the Door, and ſee no body hearkned, Doctor *Cade* being placed at the Door without; I thank you for all your Pains taken for me, both in *England* and in *Scotland*, and in particular for my Son *Charles*; and I muſt tell you, I never repented that thing ſince I was born, more than that I did not ſign the Four Bills ſent me to *Caresbrooke*, as you have adviſed me, according to your Directions; for if I had, I have lived to ſee, and know ſince, that I had not been impriſoned. And therefore by the help of God, now I will be ruled by you in whatſoever you ſhall adviſe me in this Treaty.

Sir, I thank Your Majeſty for this great Honour, I ſaid; but looking about me towards the Door, the King obſerved, and commanded Sir *Edward Walker* to open the Door, and ſee if any body hearkned. Sir *Edward* ſhuts the Door again, and anſwered, no body was without but Dr. *Cade*.

Sir, ſaid I, this Treaty is not obtained of any intention Your Majeſty ſhould or can poſſibly make your Peace by it, but it is deſigned only of purpoſe to get Your Majeſty liberty to go away, and to have Friends to help You. But looking the King in the Face, I found his Majeſties Countenance to alter very much, and to grow pale as I ſpake to his Majeſty: Whereupon I immediately apprehended his Majeſty miſliked my Advice of getting away: Upon which I inſtantly

ſaid, Yet Sir, if Your Majeſty does think in Your better Judgment, You can make your more certain Peace by Treating than You can by going away, then I beg of Your Majeſty to make Your Majeſties Conceſſions in one Declaration, and at one Inſtant, and in one Day, and I will tell Your Majeſty how Your Majeſty may do it, and I will tell Your Majeſty how much the Parliament will abate Your Majeſty upon any one Article more or leſs, as well as if Your Majeſty ſhould Treat out Your Forty Days: And if I miſtake my ſelf in any one tittle of any one Article [which is a very hard matter to do,] I will give Your Majeſty my Life. I know and underſtand Your Majeſties Buſineſs ſo well, and therefore I beg Your Majeſty to do it at one inſtant of time by one Declaration. Forty Days was only a Trick of *Cromwell*'s Party in the Houſe, who would have given Your Majeſty for Forty Days Forty Months, when they found they could not prevent the Treaty, that becauſe they hoped Your Majeſty will debate all the time, wherein they will uſe all Acts [that You may do ſo,] with all Perſons and Parties to perſuade You, that can any way have influence upon Your Majeſty: In which time, *Cromwell* may have diſpatch'd in *Scotland*, and return'd to *London* with his Army, and ſo advance his own Party in fruſtrating the preſent Peace and Treaty, and by that means cruſh the Flowers of Your Monarchy.

Well, ſays his Majeſty, looking upon Sir *Edward Walker*, I would have you conſider what Conceſſions, and how you would adviſe to make my Anſwer to every individual Article in one Body, or Declaration, as you ſay. Conſider of it a little while, and I will be with you again

again in it, and we ſhall do ſomething in it together. Sir, ſaid I, I can tell your Majeſty at this inſtant now in Your Majeſties Cloſſet as well, nay perchance better, than if I were to conſider of it a Year. Sir *Edward* ſteps to the Table, takes up a Book of the Articles, gives it the King, and ſays, Pray Sir, let the Gentleman tell it You now; he begs it of Your Majeſty; perchance it may be better for his Memory or Judgment, than at any other time. The King ſits down; Sir *Edward Walker* comes near the Table to hear, and gives me the Book of Articles. May it pleaſe Your Majeſty, with Your Royal Pardon, I think there are only theſe Four Articles will ſtick with Your Majeſty in the whole number; The *Militia*, the *Court of Wards*, *Baniſhing the Lords*, and *Expunging the Biſhops*.

Nay Sir, I will tell you, ſays his Majeſty, I will part with the *Militia* to them; that ſhall break no ſquares, as you adviſed me upon the Bills before I was impriſoned; and for the ſame Reaſons you adviſed me, which was for ten Years, ſo I may have my Revenue again inſtead of it ſetled upon me. Sir, ſaid I, that they will conſent to, and this will ſatisfie that Article.

Now for the *Court of Wards*, ſays his Majeſty, I will part with that too for the Hundred thouſand Pounds a Year they promiſed to give me; it is Twenty thouſand Pounds a Year more than ever I made of it; and I believe, when I have parted with it, the Nobility and Gentry will be the firſt will repent it, and wiſh it had never been: And the Houſes ſhall paſs a Bill to me for that purpoſe, and you ſhall go up to *London* to ſee it done for me; for as yet I have nothing but their bare words. Do you think you can get

a Bill to paſs, as I ſhall give you directions? And I will demand a Bill of the Commiſſioners. Yes, and pleaſe Your Majeſty, I'll warrant You. Then, ſays the King, the *Court of Wards* ſhall break no Squares. The other Act Your Majeſty will ſtick at, will be the Act againſt the Lords.

Says the King, that I cannot conſent to, to Baniſh the Lords.

Sir, ſaid I, they will never abate You this Article. The Reaſon is very plain; and yet they are at a greater neceſſity of having Your Majeſty at *London* in Your Throne, than Your Majeſty is; however, they will ſooner break off the Treaty. But this is my Opinion, Your Majeſty may do ſafely with Your Honour, and will ſatisfie this Article to anſwer, That though Your Majeſty can never conſent to this Article for Your Honour, or for other Reaſons Your Majeſty may pleaſe to alledge, Your Majeſty will never call them over from beyond the Seas, where now they are, without the conſent of them in Parliament; and this Variation will ſatisfie this Article. This is better for the Lords, may it pleaſe Your Majeſty, than if the Article were expunged. For by this, the Lords are beyond the Seas by an implicate leave, and may upon Your Majeſty's leave, have their Eſtates over: When, if they ſhould come back into *England* without their conſent in Parliament, as may be imagined, if this Article were expunged, they were in danger to be accuſed, as my Lord *Stafford* was, and in the like nature: And ſo if this Propoſition of Your Majeſties may ſatisfie, as I am ſure it will, it is with Your leave, the ſafeſt, beſt, and moſt prudential way for the Lords, and for Your Advantage; And, can they have a better Advocate for them in Parliament

than

than Your Majeſty? This the King approves of.

For the other Article his Majeſty made no Exceptions to, but was content to paſs them generally without any Diſpute, till the laſt Article, which was the taking away Biſhops Root and Branch.

To this of the Biſhops, my Opinion was, That your Majeſty can never part with the Biſhops for many Reaſons, and in particular, in chief for Your Majeſty's Coronation Oath: So I am confident, and Your Majeſty, if You ſhould try it, will find it, that they will not abate Your Majeſty this Article. Therefore, in my Opinion, the only way for Your Majeſty, with Your Majeſties Pardon, is to declare, That though You cannot part with the Biſhops for ſuch and ſuch Reaſons, as Your Majeſty ſhall think fit to alledge, yet Your Majeſty being willing to do what may be poſſible on Your Majeſties part, that may conduce to a laſting Peace, and Your Kingdom's Good, and to ſatisfie all Intereſſes, are willing to ſuſpend the Biſhops, till Your Majeſty and Parliament in Parliament, ſhall think fit, whether there ſhall be Biſhops, or no.

This his Majeſty acknowledges, was no breach of his Coronation Oath. I told his Majeſty, I was confident, this would be no prejudice to the Biſhops, as things now ſtood; and that I knew, if his Majeſty propoſed to do this with this Variation, it would ſatisfie the Parliament in this very Article, or I would give his Majeſty my Life; and Your Majeſty, I hear, will hardly prevail with them to do leſs on this Article; nay, I am confident, they will do no otherwiſe.

His Majeſty at laſt found it ſo; and tryed this way, when it would drive no other. And the Parliament voted the ſuſpending of the Biſhops to be ſatisfactory to the taking away the Biſhops Root and Branch. So I told his Majeſty, that with half an Eye it might be underſtood, that though they would be ſatisfied after this manner with a General Declaration of the King's Conceſſions for the preſent, yet that they could no ſooner get the King home to the Parliament, but the Biſhops would have been reſtored, before any Act paſs for Pardon, or Ratifications of Conceſſions. For no Act for ratifying the Peace, can paſs in Parliament to be valid, without the Lords Spiritual and Temporal; and when they have Your Majeſty there, they will be glad, and do things the beſt way, and ſafeſt for themſelves.

Well, ſays the King, I will ſpeak with you to morrow after Dinner, and give you ſome Directions about the Bill for the *Court of Wards*, and you ſhall go to *London* about it, to ſecure my Money, as I will give you directions; and when you return to me again with that Buſineſs, you and I ſhall do ſomething together to make an end of this Buſineſs, that I hope will ſatisfie the Parliament.

I withdrew my ſelf till to morrow after Dinner; but the King came towards me, and asked me, Is there any thing that you are engaged in, that you have promiſed, I ſhould do towards any Perſon? For I know you cannot do Buſineſs of this nature for me, but you muſt be engaged, and make Promiſes to ſeveral Perſons of ſeveral Kinds; and I muſt tell you, that I ſhall be always curious to diſoblige your Word in any Promiſe you have

have made, or make to any Perſon, let it be of what kind ſoever.

I humbly thanked his Majeſty, and ſaid, May it pleaſe Your Majeſty, I am engaged in nothing at preſent ſo much, wherein I will give Your Majeſty a Trouble at this time, as in a Promiſe I made to Sir *John Gell*, that I would prevail with Your Majeſty to take him to ſpecial Grace and Favour, and to grant him Your moſt gracious Pardon, becauſe he was very aſſiſtant to me with divers Members to obtain this Treaty to be moved, and does exceedingly repent his former Miſcarriages to Your Sacred Majeſty, and hath promiſed me he will merit Your Majeſties Favour hereafter. Sir *John Gell*, anſwers his Majeſty, I believe I know him better than you do, and have had more Experience of him. Come hither *Ned Walker*, I will tell you both a Tale of him, and it is a very real Truth; and ſo his Majeſty was pleaſed to declare to Sir *Edward Walker* and me, how he got his Baronſhip of his Majeſty, by Diſſembling, and pretending in like manner that he was ſorry, that ever he had been againſt me in the Ship Money; but for his Repentance, if I would be pleaſed to harbour a better Opinion of him, and grant him ſome mark of Favour and Honour, he would bring into my Aſſiſtance a Troop or Regiment of Horſe, and he would prevail with ſome of the Gentlemen of the County of *Derby*, where he lived, to do as much: Whereupon, in hopes he would do this good Service to me, I made him a Baronet. Immediately after, within a Week, he went to *Northampton* into my Lord of *Eſſex*, who before, thought him not worthy to be Captain of a Foot Company, ſhews *Eſſex* his Warrant that had made him a Baronet; and

and upon that, *Eſſex* gave him a Commiſſion to be a Colonel, and to raiſe a Regiment: And thus he continued againſt me ſhrewdly all this War, and kept *Derby* gariſoned againſt me all the time of the War. So I believe, ſays his Majeſty to me, he may deceive me as well as you, though you may oblige him never ſo much. I was aſhamed to ſay any more of him, after the King had declared this horrid Unworthineſs of him to Sir *Edward Walker* and me.

But after, his Majeſty was pleaſed to ſay, *Ned Walker*, give this Gentleman Pen, Ink, and Paper, in your Chamber, and let him draw up himſelf what he promiſed, I ſhould ſign for Sir *John Gell*, or any other Perſon: He is my Friend; I will have him, *Ned Walker*, draw his own Buſineſs himſelf that is between him and me always, becauſe I have ſome ſpecial Reaſons for it; and bring your Papers to me your ſelf to morrow after Dinner to my Cloſet; for I will always diſoblige of any Promiſe whatſoever it is, that you make to any Perſon, ſays his Majeſty, that you may keep your word, and be able to do my Work, and as Sir *John Gell* behaves himſelf to you, I ſhall think the better of him.

I hope, ſays his Majeſty, Mr. *Liſle* is my very good Friend, becauſe I find he is civil to you; I the rather think ſo. Sir, I will not delude Your Majeſty; I think you have not a worſe Enemy. But however, you prevail with him if you can, ſays his Majeſty; and you know, I diſoblige in any kind whatſoever. Sir, ſaid I, he is a Perſon of that vaſt Ambition, that nothing will ſerve his turn, except it be to be Secretary of State, or Lord Keeper. Says his Majeſty to me, if you find reaſon to promiſe either, I will make your Words good,

good, and your Promiſe too; and if it be to morrow Morning, you know, I have often told you ſo. I humbly thanked his Majeſty for his ſpecial Grace and Honour to me; made my obeyzance, and took my leave of his Majeſty, at this time with Sir *Edward Walker*, who came out of the Cloſet from the King with me, and was by all the while.

The next Day in the Afternoon, as ſoon as the King had Dined, I waited on his Majeſty in his Cloſet, as his Majeſty had appointed, where, after a little Diſcourſe from his Majeſty to me, he was pleaſed to tell me, upon better thoughts, He muſt deſire me not to ſpeak any thing to Mr. *Liſle* of the Secretary of State's Place; for his Majeſty had but one of thoſe Places at preſent in his power, he ſaid, and that he had ſome Reſolution to diſpoſe of it to Sir *Edward Walker*, who had taken a great deal of Pains and Care for him, and his Majeſty underſtood nothing ſo proper for him.

So his Majeſty was graciouſly pleaſed to ſign me ſome Papers to diſoblige me in a Promiſe I had made to Sir *Guy Palmes* of *Rutlandſhire*; His Majeſty was pleaſed to ſign a Warrant, to make him an *Engliſh* Baron, which his Majeſty had promiſed him at *Oxford*; but Sir *Guy Palmes* and his Son, dying both in a ſhort time after, I never delivered away his Warrant. At the ſame time, his Majeſty was pleaſed to ſign me a Warrant for a Baronet for my ſelf; which, with other Papers of his Majeſties, was after eaten by Mice, hiding them for fear behind a Wainſcot, when my Father's Houſe came to be ſearched by Parliament Officers.

But the King kept Sir *John Gell*'s Pardon in his own Hands, I mean the Warrant, and afterwards ſent it me privately lapped up, by Sir *Edward Walker*. But becauſe, ſays his Majeſty to me, you have promiſed Sir *John Gell* that I ſhould take him to ſpecial Grace and Favour, as well as Pardon him, his Majeſty would contrive ſome way ſuddenly to diſoblige me in a more ſignal manner. That in leſs than a Week after, his Majeſty declared to me, in the hearing of Sir *Edward Walker*, That his Majeſty knew no way to diſoblige me at preſent of that Promiſe, except it was to give him Sir *George Liſle*'s Place in the Houſhold, now Sir *George Liſle* was dead. I anſwered his Majeſty, That his Majeſty had graciouſly and highly obliged me already, in obliging Him and his Son, and is as much, and as great a Grace and Favour from Your Majeſty as he expected, or *I* intended him to beg of Your Majeſty for him. But you promiſed him, ſays the King, *I* ſhould take him to ſpecial Grace and Favour; and though you might not intend him more than his Pardon, yet he underſtood thoſe Words of yours to mean, *I* ſhould do more for him, ſays his Majeſty: Therefore draw up a Blank Warrant for Sir *George Liſle*'s Place, and *I* will ſign it; and do you diſpoſe of it either to him, or whom you think fit, ſays the King; or otherwiſe as you pleaſe. And his Majeſty further declared, That he did this to diſoblige me in my Words, and to keep my Credit; and that Sir *John Gell* ſhould take care of me until his Majeſty was able. *I* asked his Majeſty, if he would pleaſe to receive a Preſent from Sir *John Gell?* The King anſwered me before Sir *Edward Walker*, No, not of all things in the World,

World, he would ſuffer any thing firſt, not the leaſt Matter from him; but let him diſoblige himſelf to you, that *I* expect he ſhould do. Immediately upon ſigning theſe Warrants and Papers in the Cloſet, the King commands me to make all haſte to *London*, and ſee to get a Vote paſs, that a Bill ſhould be brought into the Houſe to ſecure to his Majeſty the Hundred thouſand Pounds a Year the Parliament promiſed, inſtead of the *Court of Wards* to the King, which, ſaid his Majeſty, is Twenty thouſand Pounds a Year more than ever *I* made of it; and then gave me directions for the Draught of the Bill: And if you can get the Bill to paſs for the Hundred thouſand Pounds a Year by the means of Mr. *Liſle*, and others, that the *Independents* Intereſs may not hinder it in the Houſe, *I* know what *I* will do with the other Twenty thouſand Pounds a Year, and *I* will make a good Allowance Yearly to you. It will be of a vaſt conſequence to me, as *I* will order it, and of more advantage to my own private, than what hitherto *I* have made of my whole Revenue; beſides, *I* never made above Fourſcore thouſand Pounds a Year compoſition of the *Court of Wards*, and that went chiefly towards the Payment of my Servants Wages: And *I* believe, when *I* have parted with it, the Nobility and Gentry will be the firſt will repent it, and will wiſh it had never been done.

For the Tenures *in Capite*, which is their concern, *I* will make them both thus labour for the paſſing this Act for the taking away this Court. *I* will help my ſelf another way, and relieve the Crown in it upon the ſetling my Revenue, which ſhall be of more advantage unto me, to help

help me in Times of Neceſſity, and War, either Civil or Foreign, than now it is to the Crown for Strength by theſe Tenures, or any Aid can come to the Crown by them, and will help and preſerve my Poſterity better, as I will tell you how hereafter, when I ſhall inſtruct you upon the Draught of that Act for reſtoring my Revenue, and for further ſetling and augmenting the Revenues of the Crown. But I muſt tell you, I will have this Hundred thouſand Pounds a Year for my own uſe, paid into my Privy Purſe, to be diſpoſed as I pleaſe, ſays his Majeſty: I will give you directions how it ſhall be raiſed, and how it ſhall be paid to me, and you ſhall receive it for my Privy Purſe. I have great reaſon to have it thus, parting with ſo great a Branch of the Crown, as the *Court of Wards* for it. And when you return to me with a Vote for a Bill, then you and I will conſider together of a Draught, and Declaration, to anſwer the Propoſitions at one time, and make my Conceſſions without ſpinning out any longer time in Treating at all.

Sir, ſaid I, the Parliament will be over-joy'd, now *Cromwell* hath beaten Duke *Hamilton*'s Army, they are ſo afraid of *Cromwell*, and ſo neceſſitated for Your Royal Preſence, to ſecure themſelves: So that they are reſolved, as ſoon as You are at *London*, to raiſe a Strength by the *poſſe Comitatus*, under the Sheriffs of *Middleſex* and *London*, which is Colonel *Browne*, and will put all *London* in a legal poſture of War, for defence of Your Royal Perſon and Themſelves, for fear leſt *Cromwell* ſhould rebel, and animate his victorious Army, which now is ſo bloodied and encouraged by this great Succeſs, eſpe-

eſpecially when he finds his own Trick loſt, and himſelf in danger to be queſtioned for fighting Duke *Hamilton*'s Army without Orders. Beſides, they have a way to make the Army moulder away from him. But, if Your Majeſty will not make haſte with Your Conceſſions, but delay time, in hope to get ſome Articles expunged, which they will, nor cannot grant Your Majeſty as things now ſtand; though they will pleaſe Your Majeſty with more hereafter, when they have Your Majeſty at *London*: Then Your Majeſty can ask either the Biſhops again, Your Majeſties Queen, and Royal Family, in more ſplendour than ever, the Baniſh'd Lords again, Your Majeſties *Court of Wards* again, and whatſoever Your Majeſties Heart can deſire, by reaſon they now ſee their Errour, that by their endeavouring to make themſelves Part ſharers of Your Majeſties Kingdoms and Government at their pleaſures, by abuſing Your Majeſty by a Rebellion, and War; for they had no other ways left them to ſerve, and compaſs their ambitious Ends, ſince they knew for certain, Your Majeſty had too much Judgment for them to attain their Deſires by an Adulation or Flattering Deſign, to ſhare Your Government, Your Honours, and Offices, at their Will. All their Succeſſes are come to this, That they are now to be ſwallowed up by *Cromwell*, and to be Slaves to his Pleaſure. I ſay, now they ſee their own Errour: When they have Your Majeſty at *London*, they will dote upon Your Majeſty, and in proper time, grant Your Majeſty more than You can wiſh, with all Duty, and Love, to recover Your Majeſties Affections and Kindneſs to them again.

Well,

Well, ſays the King, make haſte to *London* about my *Court of Wards*, that I may make an end. Within four Days I returned to the King in the *Iſle of Wight* privately, with a Vote to bring in a Bill to paſs the Two Houſes, for ſetling an Hundred thouſand Pounds a Year on his Majeſty, in lieu of the *Court of Wards*, any way as his Majeſty ſhall approve: Which Vote was ſent down to the Commiſſioners in the *Iſle of Wight*, with directions to the Commiſſioners to ſettle upon the King Two hundred thouſand Pounds a Year, rather than that ſhould prove any impediment to his Majeſties Conceſſion of the *Court of Wards*.

The King being very much pleaſed to ſee the Parliament were willing to grant his Majeſty Two hundred thouſand Pounds a Year, in conſideration of his *Court of Wards*, where his Majeſty was afraid they would hardly have given him one By-Bill, and conſented to paſs a Bill to ſettle the ſame upon his Majeſty, any way his Majeſty ſhould direct and deſire; gave me command, to look to the Draught of the Bill to be according to his Directions; and ſays his Majeſty, I will have this Money for my Privy Purſe for my own uſe, as I told you before: But firſt I will have it into the Exchequer to be entred, as I will direct you hereafter, becauſe I will not have it cheated; and then it ſhall immediately be paid me again into my Privy Purſes, which you ſhall receive and look to; and you ſhall have the Office, and Keeping, and Managing of my Privy Purſe, and tranſact my private and particular Affairs, and I will allow you Three thouſand Pounds a Year out of this Money, both for the payment of my Debts, and Expences in my Affairs, ſays his Majeſty, and for Your Maintenance and Care in this

this Buſineſs, ſo ſoon as this Money is ſetled upon me by Act of Parliament, as an Additional Revenue in lieu of the *Court of Wards*. But I will amaſs, or treaſure up this Money, or moſt of it, in the Bank, for my more private and more emergent Occaſions, both of my Own, my Queens, and for my Younger Children, and their ſecret Expences. And, ſays his Majeſty, I will make this Money of more conſequence to me, having it paid to my Hands, as I will tell you how hereafter, than all my other Revenue beſides; and I ſhall give you further directions for my Privy Purſe, upon the ſetling my Revenue, and how I will have my Revenue ſetled, when I have a little more time to talk with you about it; for, if God bleſs me, hereafter I will never be without a private growing Bank of Money annually flowing in upon me, growing, and increaſing by the Year, out of the Receipt of my Revenue and Exchequer, for my own ſecret and emergent Occaſions; and which will curb the Inſolences of Foreign Princes, impede their ſubtle Practices, which, ſays his Majeſty, I have heavily felt ſince this Rebellion and War, countermand domeſtick Stipendaries, and promote my Foreign Intelligence. And this I will have annually done, becauſe of the viciſſitude of things of this Life, ready for my uſe, [my Publick Occaſions firſt ſupplied,] and in my own cuſtody, over and above my Publick Exchequer, which I have ever in my Neceſſity found, and in all times elſe, my Lord Treaſurer and his Subſtitutes are always more maſter of than I my ſelf: And therefore I ſhall hereafter take this provident care upon my ſelf, ſays his Majeſty, and you ſhall tranſact this for me,

as one of my moſt private Affairs, and of greateſt Concern to me.

But now I muſt tell you, I ſate yeſterday in Council, to conſider of my Treaty; and I acquainted my Council, That I had formerly adviſed ſo and ſo upon the Bills, whoſe Councel, if I had been ſo fortunate as to have taken, I find for certain I had not been impriſoned.

This Gentleman, my Friend, *I* told my Council, had the Tranſactions of my Affairs in *Scotland*, and on this ſide too, and was a very inſtrumental Perſon, more than *I* would ſpeak of in this Treaty: And *I* told them, That as this Gentleman's Advice was very happy to me upon the Bills, if *I* had taken it upon any other Man's; ſo *I* had the more reaſon to rely upon your Judgment now and then: I told them what you adviſed me upon the Articles, that though they were at as great or greater neceſſity, to have me at *London* for fear of *Cromwell* than *I* was, yet that you knew in your Judgment they would not abate me more or leſs than what you told me, and gave them your Reaſons for all you ſaid, and that you adviſe me to make my Conceſſions in one Declaration at one time, and not to Treat out any one Day of the Forty. For the Forty Days were but a Deſign upon me, to give *Cromwell* time to come up to *London*, and then it was moſt likely all would be loſt.

To this my Council anſwered:

That this Gentleman acknowledges, that the Parliament are at a greater neceſſity to have me at *London* than *I* was my ſelf, though *I* had reaſon enough: So it was likely in all reaſon, weighing their neceſſity; but that upon debate, weighing,

weighing; if Your Majeſty inſiſts upon it, that they will not abate Your Majeſty three or four Articles, or ſome of them, which Your Majeſty neither in Honour nor in good Conſcience can aſſent unto. But that if Your Majeſty inſiſts upon the Article of the Lords or Biſhops, [for the *Militia*, the *Court of Wards*, and all the other Articles, *I* was reſolved not to ſtand upon,] that they will not expunge that Article of the Lords, and that of the Biſhops rather, than ruin themſelves, conſidering further, that Your Majeſty had parted with many of Your Rights in the reſt, and were very kind to them in it. But this Gentleman tells you, they will not do it. Theſe Reaſons conſidered, and if Your Majeſty inſiſts upon it to the Houſe, how, *I* beſeech Your Majeſty, can any Man living, or that Gentleman in particular, tell before-hand the certain Vote of Three hundred Men, when it is to be put to the Queſtion what they will do? If Your Majeſty propoſe, there is no Man living able to ſay, this for certain is to be depended on.

This *I* muſt confeſs, a little weighed with my Reaſon, ſays his Majeſty, and it being their general Opinion, all of the ſame mind, only Sir *Thomas Gardiner* was for you, which *I* will tell you preſently, *I* am perſuaded to Treat out ſome of my Forty Days, and ſee what *I* can do with them, and to begin to morrow.

Now Sir *Thomas Gardiner* declared himſelf thus: That Sir, Your Majeſty hath called me hither, to adviſe Your Majeſty in a matter ſtupendous and difficult; that I ſhould wrong my ſelf very much if I ſhould undertake it. If it were to reſolve Your Majeſty in a Caſe of Law, I believe I could do it as well as ſome here of

my Brethren: But in Affairs of this nature I am not able; but only I desire to say this to Your Majesty, That Mr. *Bowring* of whom Your Majesty speaks to us, is one whose Parentage I know, I know his Breeding, I have not much acquaintance with the Gentleman, and I know his Interests; so I persuade Your Majesty to be pleased to take that Mr. *Bowring* into Your Majesties Closet, and let him draw up Your Majesties Declaration, upon Your Majesties Answer with Your Majesties Concessions to the Articles, as he hath desired Your Majesty: I know the Man so well, and Your Majesty hath had some Experience of him, that I will adventure my Life, he shall make no mistake in Your Business, but conclude all without any Fault, and he is able to do it: Pray Sir, depend upon him, do it, and let me be blamed if things fall out otherwise than well. This is the best Advice I can give You: He understands Your Majesties Business better than all of us. So I have declared my Opinion and Advice to Your Majesty; I pray you, make a private Business of it between Your Majesty and this Mr. *Bowring* in your Closet. So if any thing happen otherwise than well by Treating out any of the Forty Days, and thereby lose Your Majesty better Opportunity, I here wash my hands of it, and declare it is against my Judgment. Says his Majesty to me, and some of my Council were of Opinion, That if *Cromwell* did come up to *London* before the Forty Days were expired, yet when he saw how much I had consented to, in order to a well-grounded Peace, that it would be never the worse for me; for any Interests would be glad to come in with me, says his Majesty.

Sir,

Sir, ſaid I, I know whoſe Advice that is, and his Reaſons for it, and Your Majeſty will find he miſtakes himſelf in it, and his Advice is only for his own Ends. Says the King, How can that be? He is an honeſt Man. Who do you think it is? Sir, may it pleaſe Your Majeſty, I think it is Mr. *Thomas Cooke*, and no Man elſe. Why ſhould he adviſe me? Any Intereſs will come in with me, and therefore I may ſafely Treat. How can it be for his own Ends, ſays his Majeſty? Becauſe all the World looks upon Mr. *Thomas Cooke* to be the only great Perſon with your Majeſty; and while he knows the World hath this Opinion of him, the longer your Majeſty is in Treating in this Place, all the Kingdom will make their Application to him for Places and Offices, and he hopes to have a ſweet time of it, that he could wiſh your Majeſties Treaty would laſt Forty Years to ſerve his own Turn.

This Reſolution of his Majeſties, by the Advice of his Council in my abſence to *London*, while I was upon his Majeſties Buſineſs of the *Court of Wards*, for a Bill to ſecure the Two hundred thouſand Pounds contrary to his Majeſties Reſolution when he ſent me to *London* three Days before, [being over born againſt me by his Council,] when his Majeſty intended to make his Conceſſions in one Declaration, as I adviſed him, with thoſe Variations to the Four Articles, which would never be conſented to any other ways; or [as I often ſaid,] I would give his Majeſty my Life, if I miſtook my ſelf, if his Majeſty ſhould unfottunately be perſuaded to try it. This Reſolution of the King's to Treat, very much frighted me; for I would have given my Life for a Penny. By the Forty Days end,

I feared the King would be ruined; and ſo it proved.

Well, ſays the King, I have appointed you to meet with Sir *Thomas Gardiner*, Sir *Edward Walker*, Mr. *Thomas Cooke*, Dr. *Ducke*, and Dr. *Rynes*, in Sir *Edward Walker*'s Chamber, for your Aſſiſtants, to conſult privately of my Affairs; and I have given order, That you ſhall ſee the Journal-Book of my Treaty at your pleaſure, becauſe you are not publick amongſt us at the Board; and that you ſhall be truly informed by Sir *Edward Walker*, of any thing we do, the better to inform your Judgment; and ſo I hope you will adviſe the beſt you can amongſt them for me. I ſhall hear of it. Yes Sir, ſaid I, I will and pleaſe You.

You will go to *London* to ſee the Bill prepared for my *Court of Wards* Money, and come down to me often, and ſee things here; and come to me, ſays the King, as often as you can privately, wait on me at Dinner, and I ſhall know your mind at any time, when you would ſpeak with me; and his Majeſty was pleaſed to give me a private Mark, to come to his Majeſties Chamber at any time, leſt I might have more great Occaſions and Emergencies. And when I went to *London*, his Majeſty deſired me to bring him ſome Money down with me; for he had no Money to ſend a Meſſenger and Letters into *France* to the Queen, nor to gratifie Perſons that comes from her Majeſty: But chiefly at preſent, he had occaſion to ſend to Your Majeſty, then in *Holland*, but had no Money to ſend a Perſon away, except what he borrowed of *Ned Walker* and *Tom Cooke*, and what *Ned Walker* could borrow for him, which was little, and their

Stocks

Stocks were but ſmall. The Noblemen he could not abide to ſpeak to for any, and the Duke of *Richmond* could not help him.

I went to *London* by his Majeſties Command, and brought his Majeſty a little Money. His Majeſty immediately appointed a Meſſenger to Your Majeſty into *Holland*; which he repented preſently after, the Meſſenger being falſe; and ſo his Majeſty was forced to ſend another preſently after unto Your Majeſty into *Holland*, to acquaint Your Majeſty of the falſe Treachery of this Meſſenger; which falſe Perſon, as ſoon as the King had diſpatched him away [having given him a conſiderable Piece of Money to bear his Expences] to your Majeſty with all ſpeed into *Holland*; this falſe Meſſenger makes all haſte to *London* firſt, [when the King thought he was gone Aboard for *Holland*,] and came to the *Boar's Head* in *Holborn*, and ſent a private Meſſenger to Mr. *John Liſle*, to come to him with all ſpeed, and he would diſcover to him the greateſt Secret in the World. Mr. *John Liſle* could not come himſelf, but ſent a Gentleman that waited on him in his Chamber, to whom Your Father's Meſſenger diſcourſes his Meſſage, which he was to carry privately to Your Majeſty into *Holland*, to *Liſle's* Gentleman, one Mr. *Coleman*, who immediately did tell it me again. I made all haſte to acquaint Your Majeſties Royal Father of this unfortunate Meſſenger, and what he had done; and that he was now at *London* with *Liſle*. So his Majeſty was fain to diſpatch another to Your Majeſty in *Holland*.

The Treaty went on *gradatim*, every day Conceſſions were made, the *Militia* conſented to, the *Court of Wards* conſented to, and many more Articles:

ticles: But the Commiſſioners ſtuck at the Articles for the Lords. The King cannot conſent to this Article for his Honour, againſt ſo many Perſons of ſo great Worth, and Merit, and gave in his Reaſons, which were ſent up to the Houſe, where they were reſolved not to be accepted by Vote: So things were ſomewhat at a ſtand for a Day, or thereabouts. The King declares to me, [deſiring to ſpeak with me,] that the Houſe would not expunge this Article; they will rather break off the Treaty, though [ſays his Majeſty,] I have been civil to them in moſt of the other Articles. I beſought his Majeſty to propoſe to do it with thoſe Variations as *I* formerly ſpake of to his Majeſty in his Cloſet, That though you cannot Baniſh the Lords according to that Propoſition, it is againſt Your Honour, and all Honeſty to do it, and ſo with Your Majeſties leave and pardon, Your Majeſty may alledge your own Reaſons; yet that You are content to go thus far with that Article and Propoſition, as never to call the Lords over without their conſent in Parliament. This *I* am confident will ſatisfie that Article, and begging Your Majeſties pardon, ſince the Parliament will not lay aſide this Article; this in my Opinion, is the ſafeſt, and beſt way, and the moſt honourable to ſatisfie this Propoſition.

As *I* remember, the King delivered a Paper to this Effect; and it was voted ſatisfactory to this Article: [but my Papers are ſomewhat torn by accident in this Place.] All would not do; this would not yet make an end: So the Treaty went on, the Forty Days being near ſpent. Sometimes when *I* came down to the Iſland, I waited on Sir *Thomas Gardiner*, Sir *Edward Walker*, and

Mr.

Mr. *Cooke*, where *I* was always urging them, that the King would be pleaſed to make an end in any one Day; there was nothing now that his Majeſty would inſiſt upon but the Biſhops, and if his Majeſty would pleaſe to ſuſpend them, as *I* had told his Majeſty before, it would ſatisfie that Article, and he would get the Parliament neither to go nor drive any otherwiſe at this Treaty; and time was very precious, becauſe of his Majeſties coming to *London* before *Cromwell*, that there might be time to raiſe the *poſſe Comitatus* for the defence of the King, if the Parliament and his Majeſty were agreed; *Cromwell* being now upon his march from *Scotland*. I deſired them often in Council, to perſuade the King to make an end, and Treat no longer for theſe Reaſons, and ſuſpend the Biſhops, that all might conclude in time; and *I* often endeavoured to prevail with his Majeſty in private my ſelf, and all would not do, this would not be underſtood. The Treaty went on Day by Day ſlowly upon particular Articles, till at laſt it came to be diſputed a Week together, or more, whether Biſhops were not *Jure Divino*; which Diſpute brought *Cromwell* nearer and nearer to *London*, and nothing to prevent him.

Very often in the intervals, *I* waited on his Majeſty in private, where his Majeſty was pleaſed to declare to me in theſe words, That Sir *Edward Walker* had moved his Majeſty in my abſence for a Prothonotaries Place at Common Law, that is now void, in which you were bred; but *I* told him, *I* knew he moved me without your knowledge, which he confeſs'd: For *I* ſaid, you had no need of an Advocate to me, and *I* chid him for it, and that *I* had other Buſineſs with you

more

more near my ſelf; and when time ſhould ſerve, I had both a Place for you, and Honour too, and that you knew your ſelf: And if it pleaſe God [ſays his Majeſty,] *I* live, I ſhall be as vigilant in raiſing you and your Family, as my Father was for his great Favourite; and this his Majeſty was pleaſed to ſpeak, with more Expreſſions and Grace, than my Modeſty will here give me leave to write, which was in theſe words:

'And I make no queſtion, but Sir *Edward Walker* in Honeſty and good Conſcience, is as well able 'to give Your Majeſty an account, how honoura-'ble an intention Your Majeſties Royal Father had 'to prefer me, as Mr. *Thomas Cooke* was able to 'accuſe me of, and declared it of me at a Com-'mittee where he was examined concerning the 'King's Affairs, to get his Liberty of the pretend-'ed Parliament when he was a Priſoner in the '*Tower*; for which *I* had been put to Death, if 'it had not been for Sir *Nicholas Love*.

I thanked his Majeſty for this Encouragement and Favour, and that it concerned me many ways to perſuade his Majeſty to make an end of this Treaty, though my Lord *Say* perſuaded his Majeſty he would prevail to get the Article againſt the Biſhops wiped out: His Majeſty would find it was but a Deluſion of the Lord *Say*'s to get time for the Army, for he was *Cromwell*'s Friend. Yet I could not prevail with the King to make a Concluſion, but they muſt proceed to argue whether Biſhops were *Jure Divino*.

Yet I often told his Majeſty between his Majeſty and me, that when *I* firſt acquainted his Majeſty at *Caresbrooke Caſtle*, that his Majeſty might have Council, my intention was, that his Majeſty ſhould never adviſe with them, nor make

uſe

uſe of them, as to be ruled by them; but becauſe his Majeſty of neceſſity in this juncture of Affairs, muſt part with ſome of his Rights, which would be a great thing in the Eye of Poſterity, when future Actions are to be much guided by Precedent, and no Man underſtands his Majeſties neceſſity but himſelf, to get into his Throne again: So it was good to have a Council by him, to ſave his Reputation to Poſterity, that After-Ages might not blaſt him with Puſilanimity hereafter upon Chronicles, but that it might be ſaid of him then, and upon Record, What his Majeſty did in the *Iſle of Wight*, his Majeſty did by the Advice of Council: But that his Majeſty ſhould deſign his Buſineſs upon his own Judgment, which his Majeſty would find in the End, would prove more Elegant and Exquiſite for his own Safety and his Kingdoms Good, than in ſuch ſmart Affairs to depend upon the multifarious Opinion of divers Men. Yet if his Majeſty would really depend upon their Advice, I told his Majeſty always, I feared they would put his Majeſty upon ſuch Formalities and Debates, till by Delays, and ſpending Time, all would be loſt, becauſe they did not underſtand the preſent intereſs of Things, and ſo would make Miſtakes for want of looking into the Intreague of Affairs.

But now finding all the Forty Days would be Treated out, and the Days for arguing, whether the Biſhops were *Jure Divino* being begun, which would make an end of the Forty Days, and *Cromwell* with his Army be got to Town; I pondered with my ſelf, and thought, I muſt go another courſe, for this was not to be help'd: And by the Forty Days end, when *Cromwell* came nearer, and nothing would be abated, and Time ſpent, the

the King muſt look another way to ſave himſelf, and by that time he would think ſo, which I was confident he would, when his Majeſty ſaw the Face of Things; and all Perſons alter for fear of the Army, both at *London* and in the *Iſland*. Hereupon I thought it was prudence in me, to be providing the King ſome Gold, in order to the helping his Majeſty away, without telling him of it, as ſoon as his Majeſty ſaw his own Danger, which I was very confident would be very ſuddenly. Whereupon I went to *London*, and provided Money ready, but ſaid nothing to the King of it yet.

A little before I came down to the *Iſland* again, the Diſpute between his Majeſty and the Divines was ended, and about a Week ſpun out to no purpoſe; for the Commiſſioners were ſtill to exact a Conceſſion for the taking away the Biſhops according to their Article and Inſtructions. His Majeſty Anſwers, He could not conſent, and gives in his Reaſons. The Commiſſioners ſent the King's Reaſons up to the Houſe: The Houſe would not accept of them, but voted, That his Majeſty ſhould be deſired to yield to that Article for taking away the Biſhops; and ſo voted a Day more to be added to the Forty, and ſo to end, hoping that the King would conſent: But his Majeſty inſiſted upon his Oath of Coronation, and for that Oath he could not conſiſt.

Whereupon, by chance, I coming up by Five of the Clock this Morning into the King's Preſence Chamber, where all his Majeſties Council ſtood all by the Wall, all along the Room, very melancholly: I retreated my ſelf with all ſpeed; but the King ſeeing me, called after me to come to him; but ſeeing me ſomewhat ſhie, turned

turned to his Council, and ſaid, There is no Man here ſhall do you any wrong: Upon which, the King's Council all bowed to his Majeſty. So the King took me aſide to the Window, and asked me, If I had ſeen his Paper he was to deliver in to Day about the Biſhops? for this was the laſt Day. I anſwered, No, and pleaſe Your Majeſty: Then the King opened the Paper, and bid me read it: But turned to Mr. *Cooke*, and asked him, What was the Reaſon I did not ſee that Paper the laſt Night? Mr. *Cooke* anſwered, So I might if I would. But Mr. *Cooke* had been a great while angry at me, for ſaying, It was long of him in chief, the King had not made an end without Treating out the Forty Days.

When I had his Majeſties Paper, I found the King had concluded, That he would not part with the Biſhops by no means, by reaſon his Majeſty was obliged to maintain them by his Oath of Coronation. And now I will tell you, ſays his Majeſty ſoftly to me, leaning cloſe himſelf to my Face, If I ſhould part with them at the Parliaments inſtance, as they argue it with me, there will be no danger; this may be. But another Parliament may depoſe me for Breach of my Coronation Oath, or doing the Biſhops any Injury, as things now ſtand; therefore in prudence, I think I had better adventure my Treaty, wherein I have done more already than could well in reaſon be expected at my Hands, then by this way to hazard my Crown.

Your Majeſty, I replyed, hath very good Reaſons for this: But yet Your Majeſty is aſſured, they will have this Article ſatisfied of the Biſhops, or that they will break off to the confuſion of the whole Treaty; and *Cromwell* is now coming

coming to *Windſor Caſtle* with the Council of Officers, and God knows what the Event may be; and Your Majeſty hath but one Day left to conclude all with Honour, and to ratifie the Conceſſions, or [with Your Majeſties leave] all is loſt. With Your Majeſties leave and pardon therefore, if I might perſuade Your Majeſty to lay aſide theſe Reaſons of Your Coronation Oath; but yet Your Majeſty is willing to ſuſpend the Biſhops, till Your Majeſty and the Parliament in Parliament ſhall think fit, whether there be Biſhops or no; and I will give Your Majeſty my Life if this does not ſatisfie this Article. And this you may ſafely do without any breach of your Coronation Oath, or doing the Biſhops any Injury, as things now ſtand: And when Your Majeſty ſhall no ſooner in Parliament, to paſs Acts in Parliament, to paſs Acts of Pardon and Grace to ratifie the Treaty, but they will be glad to call in the Lords Spiritual. Well, ſays the King, I will try this way, and ſee what it will do; but ſtay you here till I come again.

The King ſaid nothing to his Council, who ſtood all in the Room; but calls *Cooke* to him, takes him into his Cloſet, and makes him write a new Paper, That his Majeſty was willing to ſuſpend the Biſhops for Three Years, till his Majeſties Parliament ſhould think fit, whether there ſhould be Biſhops or no. His Majeſty came preſently out of the Cloſet with this Paper new writ, ſhewed it to me in the Window in the Preſence Chamber, and bid me read it; but Mr. *Cooke* gave me a baſe look. I told his Majeſty I did not underſtand the Three Years, and the Parliament might perchance ſtick at Three Years; for naming no Time, but till Your Majeſty and the

the Parliament ſhall think fit, might give the Parliament hopes, the Suſpenſion might laſt for ever, and ſo pleaſe them better; and perchance it might fall out between Your Majeſty and Them in Buſineſs, the Suſpenſion might not laſt a Week. Yet Your Majeſty may ſend it from the Board to *London*, to the Parliament thus; I am very confident it will prove ſatisfactory to this Article. I would Your Majeſty had been pleaſed to have done this at firſt in one Declaration, as I would fain have perſuaded Your Majeſty, and not to have Treated one Day; I believe Your Majeſty muſt needs think, it had been better. Nay I know, ſays his Majeſty, now it had been better.

The King with his Council went immediately away into the Treaty Houſe, but his Majeſty never read or opened this Paper to them. The King delivers in this Paper to the Board, as his laſt Paper in Anſwer to the Biſhops, and it was the utmoſt his Majeſty would do, or was reſolved to do upon that Article, he ſaid. The Commiſſioners ſent it up to the Parliament, who voted this Suſpenſion for Three Years to be ſatisfactory to the Article for taking away the Biſhops Root and Branch, and further voted, That his Conceſſion againſt the Biſhops, and all his Majeſties other Conceſſions, were ſatisfactory, and ſufficient to a laſting and well-grounded Peace.

The Treaty ends, the Commiſſioners make all haſte away from the Iſland to the Parliament at *London*, being a mixt number of *Independents* and *Presbiters*, ſome for Fear, and ſome for Joy; yet moſt of them were in a Fear, becauſe of the Armies coming ſo near *London*, at whoſe Mercy they now were; but they hoped well. The King's

King's Council ſhifted for themſelves for fear. Various Reports came every hour to the King in the *Iſle of Wight*, ſeveral odd and dangerous Concluſions, that were reſolved by the Council of Officers at *Windſor*, and in other Places.

His Majeſty took his leave of his Council, becauſe they would haſte to *London*; for they were generally afraid, by reaſon the Council of Officers ſate cloſe at *Windſor*, and all the Army cloſe about *London*. His Majeſty commands Sir *Edward Walker* to ſend me to him after Supper. I waited on his Majeſty in the Preſence Chamber, where his Majeſty, after he had away his Servants to Supper, leaning upon the Table, reads a Diurnal, and turning back to Mr. *Murrey*, who was then waiting behind him, commands him to leave him for a while: When *Murrey* was ſtep'd aſide, his Majeſty calls me to him, leans his Back to the Hangings, and ſtoops low to my Face, and ſays,

Now *Jack Bowring*, I have parted with many of my Rights, and made my Conceſſions in every Point as you adviſed me, and ended my Treaty, but God knows what the Event will prove.

I thought, ſays his Majeſty, I might happily have ſatisfied all Intereſſes: What is your Opinion? Deal clearly with me. Sir, I ſhould have thought very well of it, I anſwered, if Your Majeſty had concluded it at the beginning of the Forty Days by Declaration, before *Cromwell* had marched with his Army from *Edenburgh*. If Your Majeſty had been ſo fortunate, *Cromwell* had been prevented from coming to *London* long before now, and all *London* in a poſture of Defence for Security of Your Royal Perſon, and Your Majeſty Inthroned.

I am

, I am ſure, ſays the King, if I had taken thy Counſel upon the Bills, I have lived to ſee, and know ſince, I had not been impriſoned. And now, had I taken thy Advice again upon this Treaty, which my Council diſſuaded me from, telling me, How can that Gentleman tell beforehand the uncertain Votes of Three hundred Men? When now at length they ſee, we could not get one tittle abated more or leſs, than what you told me at firſt, upon any one Article: And ſo, had I made my Conceſſions in one Declaration, as you would have had me, and at one time, I find by this time I had been ſetled in my Throne. And this I have ſaid to my Council ſince my Treaty, and do believe I had been much more a happier Man than I fear I ſhall be now. Therefore, if God bleſs me with my Dominions, I will not ſettle my Kingdoms without thy Advice, and this I have ſaid to my Council ſince my Treaty.

What do you think is fit for me to do now? I looked about me, and then I kneeled to his Majeſty, and ſaid, For God's ſake to go away, for fear of your Life. At which time, his Majeſty took his Handkercher in his Hand out of his Pocket, and wiped his Eyes, and wept. His Majeſty preſently made Anſwer to me, I cannot ſtir from this Place, for I have no Money, and I have borrowed all I can already, except you help me. Sir, ſaid I, if it be your Majeſties pleaſure but to ſpare me till to morrow Night, or the next Morning, I will bring your Majeſty ſome Gold; I have provided it already. Pray do ſo, ſays the King. Whither would you have me go? After ſome little Pauſe, I told his Majeſty, to *Jerſey*, in my Opinion would be the beſt place; where, if his Majeſty pleaſed, I would wait on him, and I

would provide his Majeſty a good Ship of Strength, and a Fleet, for I had ſome little Intereſs in the Navy, which now his Majeſty was in the Iſland, I had gotten on Colonel *Rainesborough* before I went into *Scotland*, for fear of the worſt, and I would lay the Ship before *Wotton Park*, which was *Liſle*'s by a Creek, where no body could come ſo well as my ſelf, and his Majeſty might take Ship there ſafely: From *Jerſey* to *Guernſey* his Majeſty might retire at his pleaſure, if he found himſelf in any danger to the revolted Ships, or his Majeſty might command the Ships under Prince *Rupert*, to lye about the Iſland. But *I* believe your Majeſty will find no occaſion for them; for there is one Mr. *Liſle* that was made Vice-Admiral, and ſet Colonel *Rainesborough* on Shoar, and who was placed there for an opportunity to ſerve your Majeſty, and was privy and confederate to the going away of the Revolted Ships, and hath promiſed me upon any Opportunity to ſerve your Majeſty, and hath ſworn to it, whenſoever I will ſpeak the leaſt word to him; that he will recover the Honour of his Family, and will deſerve it of your Majeſty; and your Majeſty will find, upon my Letter to him, he will be your Majeſties true Subject, and all the Navy are ready to go with him, where he commands, the Confuſion at Land is ſo great. Therefore *I* can aſſure your Majeſty, you need not fear getting thither very ſafe, the rather if I ſhew my ſelf to the Lieutenant, and and Vice-Admiral *Liſle*. The King obſerving Mr. *Murrey* to look into the Room, went away very ſuddenly from me.

I went to *London* that Night with all ſpeed, but *I* was ſomewhat longer before *I* returned to the

the Iſland than I promiſed his Majeſty. I waited on his Majeſty at my Return by Five of the Clock in the Morning at his Majeſty's Bed-Chamber, within a Day, or Two. His Majeſty hearing ſomebody about the Door, he opened it, where one Mr. *Leveſton* [as I was told after,] was putting up ſome Linen upon his Majeſty's Bed. But by the Window behind the Door, was the Duke of *Richmond*, his Majeſty being ready [as I ſuppoſed] to go Abroad. As ſoon as I had made my Obeyſance, What, ſays his Majeſty to me, have you brought me any Money? Yes, and pleaſe your Majeſty, I have it here. His Majeſty came to my Side with his Side, and put his Hand near my Pocket; ſo I delivered a Purſe of Gold to his Majeſty; his Majeſty put it up in his Pocket privately. Says the King, How much is it? I anſwered, Two hundred Pounds. Says his Majeſty, Have you any more here? Yes Sir, I have much ſuch another quantity of Gold in my other Pocket. The King turns himſelf to me on the other Side to my Pocket, where I delivered his Majeſty ſuch another quantity of Gold in a Purſe. How much is it, ſays his Majeſty? Two hundred Pounds more, I ſaid. But the King took it more openly: And when his Majeſty had it in his Hand, he immediately gave it to the Duke of of *Richmond*, and commanded him to lay it by for him. This very much daunted me, for fear it ſhould be told; but my Hopes were in his Majeſties going away with me. The King whiſpers the Duke of *Richmond*; The Duke comes to me, and tells me, The King commands me to kneel; Then I kneeled: The King, in the Preſence of the Duke of *Richmond*, Mr. *Leveſton*, and others, beſtows the Honour of Knighthood upon me:

For Mr. *Leveſton*, at the ſame inſtant, opened, where there were divers Perſons; the King, in anger, commands Mr. *Leveſton* to ſhut the Door. His Majeſty was pleaſed to ſay, That he conferred that Honour upon me, as a Teſtimony of his great Favour and Kindneſs to me, and for my Love and Care for him; and was pleaſed to ſay further, That he was now in Council privately with the Duke of *Richmond* about ſome Letters: Therefore his Majeſty commanded me to wait on him after Dinner in his Cloſet, and follow him in as ſoon as he had Dined; and, ſays his Majeſty, I will talk further with you.

I retired to Sir *Edward Walker*'s Chamber, as my cuſtom was, when I came from *London* always. I was loth to tell Sir *Edward Walker*, that I had waited on his Majeſty already, becauſe I thought to have been more private in it at this time. Says Sir *Edward*, now I am ſure the King will be in a good Humour; for he is always ſo, and well pleaſed, when you come to him, and ſigns us buſineſs too; he hath expected you this day or two. Sir *Edward* returns immediately to his Chamber, and ſays to me, You have been with the King this Morning already. Sir, Why would not you tell me before? The King is in a very good Humour; and I thank God, Doctor *Cade* in a little richer condition than he was in laſt Night. So Sir *Edward* told Dr. *Cade*, he muſt go to Mr. *Cook*, and bid him come to him preſently. For the King, ſays Sir *Edward*, hath given me ſome Gold to pay Mr. *Thomas Cooke* for a Debt, which his Majeſty owed him; and hath paid ſome to me my ſelf, which his Majeſty borrowed of me the laſt Night, the Three Pounds for Parſons; and ſome his Majeſty had

had of me a Fortnight ago; he hath paid me all; and told me, turning himſelf to me, that I brought him Gold this Morning, which, ſays Sir *Edward*, was well done, and came in ſeaſon; for I proteſt, all of us here could not make up the King laſt Night, more than Three Pounds, if it had been to have ſaved his Life. I immediately denied I brought the King any Money or Gold. Sir *Edward* wondred at me, and ſaid, I proteſt the King told me you gave it him, and a good quantity too: So then I held my Peace, and ſmiled. Well, ſays Sir *Edward*, it is well done; Dr. *Cade* being by, he hugs me, and ſaid, I hope the King will go away now; I am ſure it is no Fault of yours elſe; and I pray God he may go with you, ſaid the Doctor. But I was moſt exceedingly afraid; only I conſidered, neither of them Two but was truſted with my Life over and over, and the King was reſolved the Doctor ſhould go with him to ſend of a Meſſage: But I deſired both the Doctor and Sir *Edward* not to ſpeak one word of this matter to Mr. *Thomas Cooke*. Says Sir *Edward*, Pray God ſend all things for the beſt; and God bleſs you, do the beſt you can for the King; he is reſolved to make you a very great Man. I believe Doctor, we ſtay not very long in this Iſland.

This Day before Dinner, about Ten a Clock, came Sir *Peter Killegrew* to *Newport* to the King in the Preſence Chamber, and ſpake with the King, I being by, and divers other Perſons: The King inquiring, What News? and from whence he came? Without much circumſtance, he ſaid, He came from *London* yeſterday, and to day from *Windſor*. But, Sir, I am loth to tell your Majeſty how things are like to be with your

Majeſty, if God does not pleaſe to preſerve you miraculouſly; and yet, ſays he, I came on purpoſe to let your Majeſty underſtand it, that you may provide for your Safety in time. I may go to Priſon for this: Sir, The Army have reſolved at *Windſor* in Council, and in Council in ſeveral other Places at and about *London*, to take you out of the *Iſle of Wight* by force, and bring your Majeſty to *London*, Try you for your Life, and Murther you Publickly.

His Majeſty not at all daunted, anſwered, He could not believe they would Murther him; and that he believed, it would be a more difficult thing for them to attempt any ſuch thing than was imagined, and moſt unſafe to themſelves. So Sir *Peter Killegrew* took his leave, and ſaid, He was confident he ſhould go to Priſon for his part, if not to the Pot. Yet before Sir *Peter Killegrew* went his way, his Majeſty was pleaſed to ſay further, and declare, That Sir *Thomas Fairfax*'s Commiſſioners is to bring me to my Parliament, and I have now agreed with my Two Houſes of Parliament. I muſt confeſs, he is a greater Soldier than I am; yet I underſtand my ſelf ſo well, that Sir *Thomas Fairfax* will find it a hard matter to bring me to *London* [now I have agreed with my Two Houſes of Parliament, both Lords and Commons,] by Force, and in cold Blood, to cut off my Head in the City of *London*. This his Majeſty anſwered to Sir *Peter Killegrew*: Sir *Peter* made his Obeyſance, and went his way.

I waited on his Majeſty after Dinner in his Preſence Chamber; and as his Majeſty went from Dinner into his Cloſet, his Majeſty made me a private Sign to follow him into his Cloſet. As

ſoon

ſoon as I was in, his Majeſty was pleaſed to tell me, He had received this Morning early, ſome Letters from a Friend Beyond Seas, wherein he was adviſed not to go out of the Iſland by any means, for it was not in the power of the Army to do his Majeſty the leaſt Harm, or to touch one Hair of his Head, and ſhewed me the Letter. So that, ſays his Majeſty, if I ſhould go with you now, as I thought to have done, and things fall out otherwiſe than well with me, and the rather becauſe my Treaty hath had ſo fair an End, as you ſee by their Votes, That my Conceſſions are Satisfactory, *&c.* And eſpecially, ſince I have received this Advice, [you gueſs from whence it comes,] I ſhall be alway blamed hereafter; and ſo told me ſome other more private and material Reaſons, which I durſt die, if ever they ſhould happen. I anſwered his Majeſty, And ſhall; if your Majeſty be pleaſed, tell them to your Majeſty; but thought not fit to write them in this Paper. And his Majeſty further ſaid, The Duke of *Richmond* was of the ſame Opinion with him; therefore, ſays his Majeſty, I am reſolved to ſtay here, and God's Will be done. I anſwered his Majeſty, I was wonderful ſorry for this his Reſolution, having ſo fair a Way to go now, and ſo great an Occaſion and Aggravation: And I muſt crave leave to tell your Majeſty, That peradventure the Duke of *Richmond* might be afraid to adviſe your Majeſty to go out of the Iſland, leſt he might ſuffer in it by the Army; and your Majeſty may eaſily diſcern, That the Army and the Houſes will divide their Intereſſes: And Sir *Peter Killegrew* hath told your Majeſty this Morning, in my hearing, and others, That the Army are reſolved to deſtroy your Perſon, and to

Murther you: That in my Judgment, if your Majeſty ſhould retire your ſelf yet for a while, and to ſend the Parliament word where you are by your Letters, and that you expect your Peace according to the Treaty, but are forced to retire for fear of the Army, which is in a nature fallen from their Obedience to both Houſes of Parliament; and therefore your Majeſty hath juſt reaſon to ſuſpect your Self in danger; and ſo to take no notice of what Sir *Peter Killegrew* told your Majeſty, that *Fairfax* and *Cromwell*, and their Mirmidons, have deſigned your Life. In all likelihood your Majeſty may be ſafeſt this Way, and the Two Houſes of Parliament greatly glad, and approve of your Retirement. For when your Majeſty, which is the Prize both Houſes aim at, is out of their reach, the *Don Alonſo de Cardenas*, and all Foreign Agents and Solicitors to the Army, will be non plus'd, and private Stipendaries deceive their Maſters, and perchance their Vizards with their Wages. The Officers of the Army will not be able, nor over-willing to lead the Army againſt the Two Houſes of Parliament; and the Lords and Commons will not be againſt your Majeſty, becauſe of your Conceſſions, and their own Danger. Here *Fairfax* and *Cromwell* will both loſe their Trick, their bloody Trick again, and, I believe, will find it a hard matter to preſerve themſelves; for every Officer, for fear, will detect them of their Deſign againſt your Royal Perſon, to clear himſelf, I, and deliver them up too, if the Houſes inſiſt upon it; and your Majeſty will be called for by your Two Houſes of Parliament, and be placed both by the Houſes and the People any way, and reſtored to your Royal Authority and Throne; That in my Judgment,

ment, if your Majeſty will retire, both their Rogueries will out, and their Deſign againſt your Royal Perſon, and both Houſes of Parliament will find it out, and they will be queſtioned for both, and *Cromwell* for fighting Duke *Hamilton* without Commiſſion, and Orders and All will to pieces. But if they ſeize upon your Royal Perſon, they will do what they liſt with the Army, command them in what miſchief they pleaſe, becauſe the Army and Officers know, the Parliament [when your Majeſties Perſon is in their power,] dares not ſqueek. And in this, no Perſon or Friend living from Beyond Seas, is able to adviſe your Majeſty in reaſon for your Safety, becauſe they are inſenſible of the mutability of Intereſſes, and various Occurrences of Things which happen new here every Hour.

Yet *I* could not prevail; his Majeſty reſolved to ſtay there, and take his Fortune, and God's Will be done: But declared to me, that however it might pleaſe Almighty God to diſpoſe of him, he would acquaint the Prince, his Son, of all my Tranſactions and Services done for him, and he did not doubt but he would take care of me, of my Engagements for his ſake, and be as good a Friend to me as he himſelf intended to be, if it pleaſed God to preſerve him with Life; and would ſend the Princeſs Royal word by Mr. *Oudart*, how faithful and how ſerviceable I had been to him all along. And Mr. *Oudart* can tell your Majeſty, that your Majeſties Royal Father relied upon me principally to his laſt Breath, and that I waited on his Majeſty in *Windſor Caſtle* in ſome Buſineſs dangerous to my Life, and was by him all the while at the High Court of Juſtice, [as they moſt traiterouſly ſtiled it,] and was next

to

to his Arm, by his own Command, as Sir *Edward Walker* can tell your Majeſty, to aſſiſt his Majeſty, and to bring Sir *Edward*, and other Friends, an account of what paſs'd.

And I took my unfortunate leave of his Majeſty in his Cloſet at *Newport*; but yet his Majeſty charged me to ſtay at *Newport*, and not to go to *London* till [ſays his Majeſty,] I ſee further.

Within an hour after I came from his Majeſties Cloſet from the King, *I* underſtood that Mr. *Liſle* had been in the Iſland theſe three days, and came down to bury his Father Sir *William Liſle*, and had ſent for me to come and ſpeak with him, hearing by chance, that I newly came into the Iſland. I went back to his Majeſties Cloſet to acquaint him with it; his Majeſty charged me to bring him to kiſs his Hand. I know, ſay his Majeſty, Sir *William Liſle* his Father is dead. If he comes with you to kiſs my Hand, [ſays his Majeſty,] *I* will Knight him: *I* leave it to you to do what is fit; you know my mind.

I went to Mr. *Liſle* with his Servant, to his Houſe at *Wotton Park*, and thought to have lain there that Night, but *I* could not perſuade him to wait on his Majeſty now he was come down into the Iſland, and to kiſs his Majeſties Hands: Yet *I* aſſured him, that *I* knew his Majeſty intended a very great Favour for him, and that *I* know, and have been told it often, that his Majeſty ſpeaks graciouſly and kindly of him, *Liſle* anſwered, it was too late, and he durſt not do it; and ſo told me, ſome part of the Army came the laſt Night to *Southampton*, and within a day or two at the moſt, would take the King out of the Iſland, and he feared worſe; and therefore, wiſh'd me not to ſtay in the Iſland, leſt *I* ſhould

ſhould be ſeized on, and undone. *I* tell you, ſays Mr. *Liſle*, for your own Preſervation. Sir, ſaid I, is it done with the Parliaments conſent? He ſaid, No, he believed not. Sir, ſaid *I*, then the King might prevent this. Yes, ſays he, if he knew of it in time, and gravely nodded.

When Mr. *Liſle* was gone to Bed, I went back to *Newport*, but could not ſpeak with his Majeſty till the next Morning early; and then *I* acquainted his Majeſty withal what Mr. *Liſle* ſaid to me concerning his Majeſties Danger, to be taken of force away out of the Iſland by the Army, which lay now at *Southampton* for that purpoſe; and that Mr. *Liſle* ſaid to me by chance, the King might prevent them if he knew of it in time, and preſerve his Life, which the Army was reſolved upon; and that Mr. *Liſle* ſaid, all this was intended without the Parliaments conſent. However, his Majeſty was reſolved to ſtay in the Iſland, and not to ſtir, and God's Will be done, and for thoſe Reaſons his Majeſty ſaid he had told me before. And I would be glad to have the honour to tell your Majeſty, but it is not fit to write them here.

I anſwered his Majeſty, *I* believe, with your Majeſties Pardon, it is but your Majeſties apprehenſion, it never can happen ſo poſſibly. But it moſt certainly appears, if your Majeſty does not ſuddenly provide for your own Safety, by going ſecretly away; your Majeſty is certainly threatned by the Army with your Life. Sir *Peter Killegrew* hath told Your Majeſty ſo. Your Royal Family is in danger to be ruined, beſides Your Kingdoms, and Millions of other Men. Therefore, *I* beſeech Your Majeſty, for God's ſake, to retire your ſelf for a while from theſe Mens Malice,

Malice, to *Jerſey* or *Guernſey*, or ſome other Place, as Your Majeſty ſhall think fit. His Majeſty made me no Anſwer, but admired Mr. *Liſle* would not come to to kiſs his Hands, where he intended him ſo noble a Favour. So his Majeſty charged me, for fear of the worſt, that I ſhould be ſure to keep my Friendſhip with him, and with thoſe People, and leſt you ſhould think, ſays his Majeſty to me, it may do you harm hereafter. Sir *Edward Walker* ſhall bear you witneſs, it is my Commands to you for my own good. And his Majeſty within an hour or two ſent a Meſſage to me by Sir *Edward Walker* to the ſame purpoſe, with a charge to me to keep my Intereſs with them.

This Day, as his Majeſty ſate at Dinner, there came a tall Man with his Spanner and Scarf, whereby every Man in the Preſence, ſuppoſed him ſome Officer in the Army, no Man there knew him: The King inquiring in a ſecret Way, If any Perſon in the Preſence knew him? No Man knew him. This Stranger placed himſelf confidently in his Majeſties Face, yet he looked very ſeriouſly and mournfully upon his Majeſty: At laſt a *French-man* belonging to *Hammond*, came to me in the King's Eye, and deſired me to entertain that Gentleman with a Bottle of Wine and a Diſh of Meat at the *Bull-Inn* in *Newport*, till his Maſter came home, who dined Abroad. For he was ſent, the *French-man* ſaid, to ſpeak with his Maſter from the Head-Quarters at *Windſor*.

I took the Gentleman before the King [being glad of this Opportunity to know who he might be, that I might inform his Majeſty,] and went away with him to the *Bull-head*, where the Gentleman

tleman drank the King's Health, which I wondered at; and when I pledged him, immediately he ſaid, Shall I ſee *Hammond* here after Dinner? I anſwered, His *French man* ſays ſo. Sir, ſays the Gentleman, Do you belong to the King or to Colonel *Hammond*? I anſwered, To neither; only I was deſired by the *French man*, as I was an Acquaintance of Colonel *Hammond*'s, otherwiſe a Stranger in the Iſland, to keep you company till his Maſter came to wait on you. Then ſaid the Gentleman, I can diſcourſe more freely with you: I am come from the Head-Quarters by command, to bring *Hammond* with me thither to Night. Sir, ſaid I, he will hardly go out of the Iſland with you ſo far as the Head-Quarters. I'll warrant you, ſays he, he goes with me; for he is my Priſoner. So this Gentleman went down to ſee his Horſe, and I went with him: I ſtep'd a little aſide, and ſent for Dr. *Cade* to come to me, to ſend the King word, who expected to hear from me every moment.

Immediately comes Colonel *Hammond* to the *Bull Inn* Door on *Horſeback*, and asks for the Gentleman that ſtaid there to ſpeak with him, but ſtill ſits on Horſeback. The Gentleman came out of the Stable to the Door, only his Sword on, and ſays, Are you Colonel *Hammond* the Governour of the *Iſle of Wight*? Yes, ſays Colonel *Hammond*, your pleaſure with me? Says this Perſon, I am commanded to bring you a Priſoner to the Head-Quarters at *Windſor*? Sir, ſays *Hammond*, What Force have you in the Iſland? The Officer anſwered, My ſelf only. *Hammond* drew ſomething from him, and ſaid, It is ſtrange you ſhould be commanded to bring me a Priſoner out of the *Iſle of Wight*, where I

have

Cobbett and *Merriman*, from *Southampton*, and Landed at *Cows* Harbour in the *Iſle of Wight*, by Eleven of the Clock, which this *Eures* commanded to *Newport*, and commanded Mr. *Mildmay* from his Lodging to ſhew him where the King's Chamber was; and ſo in the Name and by the Command of General *Fairfax* and the Council at *Windſor*, *Eures* aſſiſted by *Cobbett* and *Merriman*, takes the King out of his Bed at *Newport*, and hurries him over to *Hurſt Caſtle* about Six a Clock that Morning, where the King [as I think] was ſhut up near Ten Days, or all out, and put away all Perſons and Servants about him, except *Mildmay*.

The Parliament proteſted againſt the Army [that was grown now Imperious, and would own no Superiour,] for ſeizing on the King, and taking of his Majeſty by Force out of the *Iſle of Wight* to *Hurſt Caſtle*, and voted a Letter to *Fairfax*, to charge him to recal his Letter to Colonel *Eure*, which was to ſeize on the King, and to Command *Fairfax* to command Colonel *Eure* to return the King to *Newport*, and to put the King in the ſame Freedom as his Majeſty was in when *Eure* took his Majeſty into his power, and to reſtore *Hammond* to his Command and Charge. But inſtead of obeying the Command of the Lords and Commons, the King was violently removed from *Hurſt Caſtle* to *Windſor Caſtle*, where his Majeſty was kept cloſe in Lodgings in the Upper-Court, with a great Guard at the Chamber-Door, and ſometimes in his Chamber, under the Command of one Colonel *Tomlinſon*, as *I* was told; *Mildmay* waiting upon his Majeſty as Carver, and one *Muſchampe* as Cupbearer, and no other Servants as *I* could hear of.

I adven-

I adventured to wait on his Majeſty in *Windſor Caſtle*, and was fortunate in it, as Mr. *Oudart*, [where no Friend living but my ſelf came in the ſight of him, but was threatned within two or three Days after to be put to death for it,] to acquaint the King of ſome Succeſs of vaſt importance to his Majeſty; and what Foreign Solicitations were made to the Army againſt him; and by the favour of *Mildmay* and *Tomlinſon*, was moſt fortunately left for ſome time with the King privately by my ſelf, *Mildmay* being my Friend, only a Lady with me, which *I* carried, for fear if they ſhould not admit me to come ſo near as to ſpeak with his Majeſty a private Word, this Lady by kiſſing his Hand, and his Majeſty graciouſly Saluting her again, that ſhe might by that Opportunity convey in that moment of time a word or two in his Majeſties Ear; which ſhe did.

The King immediately ſitting down to Dinner, *I* had the Honour to wait and ſee his Majeſty all the while he eat at Dinner; when the King had dined, *Mildmay* pretended to Mr. *Tomlinſon*, to leave the Lady for a while a little, to look upon the King to pleaſe her, becauſe, he ſaid, ſhe was a Young Lady, and me to wait upon her until their Dinner was ſerved upon the Board, and then they would call us both to dine with them. *Tomlinſon* and *Mildmay* left us both with the King, and ſhut the Door, where his Majeſty firſt lamenting his own Misfortune privately in my Ear, was pleaſed to give me command to ſtand by him at his Tryal, to aſſiſt him, and ſeveral other Things in charge and command; but in particular, commanded me to acquaint your Ma-

talk almoſt but of this Combat of *England*. Our courſe of *England* hath divers that approve it not, [though otherwiſe no Papiſts,] for that they think it both troubleſom and dangerous, *&c.* I got for Money the ſight of a Book, and in ſome few Nights I took out all the Sum and chief Effect thereof, ſent hither by a certain principal Perſon to be reprinted, and do ſend it herewith unto you, promiſing alſo to ſend the whole Work aſſoon as ever it ſhall come forth, *&c.* And in truth, if *I* ſhall tell you my Opinion about the haſty ſpreading of this Book, there are ſo many Points of Curioſity and hidden Hiſtories touching our Eſtate diſcovered in the ſame, and ſo many Perſonal Cauſes, Conditions of Men, and ſecret Affairs unfolded, [whereof Man's Nature, partly by deſire of Novelty, partly by corrupt Inclination to hear willingly other Mens defects, is greedy to underſtand,] as *I* marvel not that Printers make great Expedition to gain thereby. The like *I* find in the late Hiſtory of *Saunder*'s in *Latin*, *De Schiſmate Anglican.* for that it contained Matter of Curioſity and Novelty in Perſonal Affairs, is printed again in divers Languages. But for this Book againſt the Proclamation, *I* do aſſure you, it is the moſt ſharp, bitter, and odious thing, that ever *I* think was written by the Papiſts, thought that the Writer pretend great Modeſty, and uſeth not open railing Terms, but by a cloſe, fluent, and cutting Stile, and by diſcuſſing of many and curious Particularities, and by pretending to prove all he ſaith by our own Books, Laws, Chronicles, and Records; he filleth his Reader with infinite deſire to read all throughout; he putteth down the whole Proclamation turned into *Latin*, by Parts or Sections, [which is another

Curioſity

Curioſity that other Books obſerveth not ;] and he anſwereth the ſame by ſeveral Heads diſtinctly ; and in the end, he putteth in *Latin* the Articles annexed to the Commiſſion for Inſtruction to the Commiſſioners, *&c.* He putteth down in his Anſwer, *A Letter of my Lord Treaſurer's written with his own Hand,* [as this Fellow avoucheth,] *written from* Weſtminſter *the* 10*th of* January *laſt, written to one in the* Low Countries, *&c.* The Writer maketh himſelf one *John Philopatris* Prieſt and Divine, that hath ſtudied at *Rome,* and deſcended of Times paſt of *Engliſh* Blood ; but he that will read the Book [which is ſome eighteen or twenty Leaves of printed Paper, or more,] will eaſily ſee that he hath lived very lately in *England,* or elſe is very extraordinary inſtructed in the Affairs thereof ; and when *I* conſider, that *Philopatris* in *Greek* ſignifieth a Lover, or Friend of his Country, I eaſily ſee the Name is but borrowed, and ſo make account, it may be taken up in their ſenſe by any of our *Engliſh* Papiſts, *&c.* This Extract that *I* now ſend, if you think good, you may preſent to our good Lord and Maſter in my Name ; tho' in truth, the Tooth and Stomach of the Writer ſeemeth to be ſo ſpecially great againſt his Lordſhip above all others, and toucheth him ſo bitterly in ſo many places, that I am aſhamed, and half afraid alſo that it ſhould be given to his Honour on my behalf ; yet *I* could not with my Duty and Allegiance, but advertiſe the Matter as I find it ; and ſo have I done in the Abbreviation, taking out every thing as near as I can in ſenſe, tho' not in words, as in the Book it lyeth, and that in more ſweet and temperate manner than there it is ſet down, culling out only the Heads of the

moſt principal Matters, and leaving the Diſcourſe, Declarations, and Proofs of the ſame, which are in truth, more piercing, plauſible, and popular, than will eaſily be imagined, but by reading the whole; And in one word, believe me Sir, that it is a very peſtilent Book; and ſo, I pray, adverтiſe his Lordſhip, *&c.*

Firſt, In the Preface he takes upon him to diſcover the true Cauſes of this Proclamation, the King of *Spain*'s Preparation of Wars, the lack of Money in *England*, and the Art to get it this way, by feigning Terrour and Troubles at home. *Secondly*, He ſheweth what Modeſty and Humility the Catholicks have uſed hitherto in their own defence, alledging, *&c.* upon hope, that ſome more clement and gentle way would be taken by Her Majeſty and Council; but ſeeing by all their ſubmiſſion they have profited nothing, he purpoſeth to deal more plainly in this his Anſwer, than others have done heretofore, promiſing notwithſtanding, the Modeſty that ſhall be convenient for the Time, Perſons, and Matter he handleth.

The Firſt Head concerneth theſe words, [*By the Queen*;] where he examineth whether ſo many fierce and cruel Laws and Proclamations againſt Catholicks, do proceed of Her Majeſty's own Inclination, or no; or, by the inſtigation of others, for their own Commodity, abuſing Her Majeſty's Sex and Age at the Beginning; whereunto he rather yieldeth, and nameth five or ſix principal Men the Cauſes and Inſtruments of all Miſery to *England*, as he termeth it, *&c.*

Theſe he affirmeth to have been Sir *Nicholas Bacon*, my Lord Treaſurer, the Earl of *Leiceſter*, Sir *Francis Walſingham*, and Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton*,

ton, of whom, he ſaith, he will tell their Beginnings, their Entrance with the Queen, their manner of Proceeding, their Actions, and their Endings, obſerving the Order rather of their Deaths and Falling, than of their riſing to Honour; for that, he ſaith, the remembrance of this Day is more joyful to good Men, than that of the other, and for that my Lord Treaſurer is the only Man of all the five that now liveth, he reſerveth his Story for the laſt place of all.

He ſheweth, for Sir *Nicholas Bacon* and my Lord Treaſurer, the one helping the other by the Aſſiſtance of Sir *Anthony Cooke* their Father-in-Law, and Sir *John Cheeke* King *Edward*'s Schoolmaſter, came both firſt in Favour: That Sir *Nicholas Bacon*'s Father, Servant to the Abbot of *Bury*, and Keeper of his Sheep and Cattel, put his Son to *Grays-Inn*, where firſt he was Under-Butler, and after, by the Augmentation Court and Attorneyſhip of the Wards, came to be Lord Keeper, wherein he ſhewed himſelf ſo corrupt and partial for Bribery, as never Man before or ſince in that Place. For which he alledgeth a Proteſtation of *Plowden* the famous Lawyer, made at the *Chancery* Bar, *Bacon* there preſent, That he would never return thither ſo long as ſo corrupt a Judge ſhould ſit in that Place, which he performed. He addeth other particulars touching the Life and Death of Sir *N. Bacon*.

Of my Lord of *Leiceſter*, the variety of Fortune which he ſaw, and proved in his Life, born and brought up in all Abundance and Felicity, and after, himſelf in extreme Calamity, his Father and Brother being put to Death, and himſelf condemned, but Fortune nothing again, lifted him up higher than ever before, but all to the

worſe; for he had never been ſo wicked, if he had not been ſo potent. The Son of a Duke, Brother of a King, Nephew of an Eſquire, and great Grand-child of a Carpenter. The Carpenter, by all likelihood, was the happieſt Man of all the Generation; for that perhaps, he was an honeſt Man, and died in his Bed; whereas, *&c.* how he left the Catholick Faith, which for divers Years, at the beginning, he favoured. Of the Murthering of his Wife at *Cumner*; his Adulteries and Rapines. Of his Dealings in *Flanders*, and miſerable Death without a Friend: And of the quick Marriage of Lady *Lettice* after his diſpatch, *&c.*

Sir *Francis Walſingham* ſerving of *Leiceſter's* turn in all things Ambaſſador in *France*, how he came to be of the Council held a Faction againſt my Lord Treaſurer, a Man of haſty, fiery, and cruel Nature, *preſertim contra Catholicos*, ſpent infinitely upon Spiery; and when Matter wanted, filled her Majeſty's Ears with Matters feigned; died in Debt, deprived of his great Idol Sir *Philip Sidney*, his Son in Law, and ſtrucken in the Secret Parts of his Body, as *Euſebius* reporteth of *Maximus* the Tyrant.

Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton*, whoſe good Nature he commendeth above all the reſt, and if he had any feeling of Religion, he thought the Catholick to be the truer, and ſo he proteſted ſecretly to his Friends, [as to *William Creighton*, *Scotch* Jeſuite;] that his Hand had never ſubſcribed to the Death of any one Catholick, nor ever ſhould, which he thinketh not to be true, conſidering his Authority and Place he had in the Council; the bitter Speeches which he often uſed in the Star-Chamber againſt Catholicks for the Maintenance

of

of his Credit, &c. And then he ſheweth how wicked a thing it is to perſecute Catholicks, which moſt of them in private will deny to their Friends to have their Fingers in, and above the reſt the Lord Treaſurer, who ever ſecretly feigned himſelf to be a Moderator and Mollifier of the Catholicks Afflictions, until of late his Lordſhip hath been forced to ſhew himſelf openly their unmasked Enemy. The like the Council of *Edward* the Sixth, when the Duke of *Northumberland*, the Earl of *Arundell*, the Earl of *Pembroke*, the Lord *Pagett*, Sir *William Peter*, and others, ſate daily upon Orders to publiſh Catholicks, whoſe Religion both at a time they knew to be true, and after choſe the ſame to die therein, &c. *Ergo*, He thinketh Sir *Chriſtopher Hatton* to have been moſt unhappy in thoſe things, wherein other Men do think him fortunate, which are the Favours he had with Her Majeſty, &c. His Death ſubject to ſuſpicion of Poyſon; and the next day after his Death, the Lord Treaſurer triumphed, and got forth this Proclamation *contra Catholicos*, which he never had done if the other had lived, &c.

Lord Treaſurer, he more than all the reſt, hath, and doth ſeek the deſtruction of Catholicks by covert Means; and though while others lived more open, he ſhrouded Himſelf and his Doings now under *Walſingham*, under *Leiceſter*, ſignifying to Catholicks, that they were only the Cauſes, &c.

Of the Lord Treaſurer's Pedegree: How *Cecill* his Father, Groom of the *Wardrobe*, was never called Maſter but in jeſt; and his Mother would never ſuffer her ſelf to be called Miſtreſs, but when her Son was made Baron of *Burleigh*.

His

His Grandfather one of the King's Guard, kept the beſt Inn in *Stamford*, himſelf firſt of all Bellringer in St. *John's College* in *Cambridge*, and after, grew by Learning and Cunning, by the helps and favour of Sir *John Cheeke* and Sir *Anthony Cooke*, to be Secretary to the Duke of *Somerſet* Protector, to whom he was a ſtickler, to ſet him againſt his own Brother the Admiral, for pleaſing the Dutcheſs, and to cut off his Head as he did; the principal inſtrument to bring in Father *Latimer* to be an Agent, as he was in that Tragedy; and for this Service, by the Dutcheſs of *Somerſet*'s procurement to her Husband, Mr. *Cecill* was made Secretary to King *Edward* VI. After, ſeeing *Dudley* Earl of *Warwick* more cunning and potent than the Duke of *Somerſet* his Maſter, he ſecretly forſook him, and betrayed him, and gave Matter of Overthrow to *Warwick* againſt him; for which Service, Mr. *Cecill* was ſet up by *Warwick*, and brought into the King's Favour and Council again; and he followed that Man's Fortune ſo long as he ſtood in Proſperity; even to the deprivation of all King *Hen.* VIII. his Children, and penned the Proclamation and Oaths, that the Duke of *Northumberland* and *Suffolk* ſet forth againſt them, and could have been content to have diſpatch'd them with his own Hand; if *Northumberland* would have put him to it, *&c.*

Queen *Mary* eſtabliſhed in the Crown, and the Duke of *Northumberland* Beheaded; the Treaſurer betrayed himſelf to get Credit with Catholicks, frequented Maſſes, ſaid Letanies with the Prieſts, laboured a pair of great Beads which he continually carried, preached to his Pariſhioners in *Stamford*, and asked Pardon of his Errours

in

in King *Edward*'s time; protested to Sir *Francis Ingleſeild*, and divers others, of his Belief; and perſuaded Sir *William Peter* to reſign his Secretaryſhip to him, if Queen *Mary* would have admitted the ſame, who never could be perſuaded to believe him.

Cecill being rejected by Queen *Mary*, got to ſerve the Lady *Elizabeth*, and entred with Her when ſhe came to the Crown, to the change of Religion, *&c.* How the Earl of *Arundell* was couzened by him, and *Bacon*, with hope of having the Queen in Marriage, *&c.*

The Proceedings of *Cecill* and *Bacon* ſeeming intolerable to the antient Nobility of the Realm; they joined in the old Lord Treaſurer's Houſe, to pull them both from Her Majeſty by Violence, and to hang them at the Court-gate; but *Cecill* eſcaped, by abuſing the Duke of *Norfolk*, with Weeping, and fair Promiſes, and paid him afterwards with cutting off his Head, *&c.*

The Lord Treaſurer hath gotten all the great Offices, almoſt, of the Court and Country, and how playing the *Haman*, *&c.* Of Sir *Walter Rawleigh*'s School of Atheiſm, and of the Conniver that is Maſter thereof, and of Diligence uſed to get young Gentlemen to his School, wherein the Old Teſtament and New are jeſted at, and Scholars are taught to ſpell God backwards, *&c.*

How miſerable a thing it is, that Her Majeſty deſcended of ſo Noble Progenitors, ſhould make Laws and Proclamations according to theſe Mens Senſes and Opinions, *&c.*

The

The Second Head of this Firſt Section about theſe words, in the Title of the Proclamation, [*Viz.*] *A Declaration of great Troubles pretended againſt the Realm by a number of Seminary Prieſts, Jeſuits*, &c.

He laboureth to ſhew the true Cauſes of Troubles, Fears, and Perils towards *England*, not to proceed of Seminaries, but of their Accuſers, *&c.* The great Differences, and Wars in Religion, not only with *Catholicks*, but between *Proteſtants*, and *Puritans* themſelves. He toucheth their Books written one againſt another, as *Martin Marprelate*; *Mar. Martin*; *The Work for the Cooper*; *The Counter Cuff to Martin Junior*; *The Owl's Almanack*; *The Pap with a Hatchet, or Country Cuff*; *The Epiſtle to Huff, Snuff, and Ruff*, &c. and Propoſitions gathered by R. *Aliſon*, and dedicated of late to Sir *Thomas Henedge*, *&c.* Another Danger, he ſaith, to be the incertitude of the Succeſſion, by my Lord Treaſurer procured, by keeping her Majeſty from Marriage, *&c.* Of the peſtilent Doctrine of *Hacket*, *&c.* All Poyſon to the Wound that is uſed for a Medicine, *&c.* He declareth for the King of *Spain*; how coming into *England* 1554, by conſent and invitation of the Realm, to marry Queen *Mary*: He found the Lady *Elizabeth*, after She had been Priſoner in the *Tower*, for Sir *Thomas Wyatt*'s Rebellion, committed to *Woodſtoke*, in the Cuſtody of Sir *Henry Bedingfeild*, and in danger of Her Life; for that Queen *Mary*, and the *Engliſh* Council, upon Confeſſion of *Wyatt* himſelf, and others, were reſolved to have Her Arraigned, and Executed: How de delivered her out of this Danger,

ger, and of the like after, She acquitted her for the ſpecial Favour of the King, and his *Spaniſh* Council. How he gave her all Queen *Mary*'s Jewels, and other Riches, *&c.* My Lord Treaſurer ſaith in his Letter, That *Leiceſter*'s great Grandfather was no leſs than a Lord *Dudley*'s Son; wherewith this Anſwerer ſaith, He will not greatly trouble himſelf, though this new Genealogy ſeem ſtrange, and not credible to many *Engliſh mens* Ears of moſt Knowledge and Experience, *&c.* And the Lord Treaſurer ſaith, That albeit, *Bacon*'s Father were no Man of Living, yet was he accounted ſo Wealthy, as he left Two of his Sons Stocks of Money to be honeſt Merchants; and to the Third [which was afterwards Lord Keeper,] Maintenance for his Study in *Grays Inn*, *&c.* Of himſelf, my Lord Treaſurer ſaith, his Houſe comes of the ancient *Sittleitts* of *Wales*, and are deſcended from the Reign of the Conquerour, and have Matched, and come of Noble Houſes both of *England* and *Wales*, and of the Princes of *Wales*; and that his Grandfather *David Cecill*, came out of *Britany* a Sergeant at Arms firſt with King *Hen.* VII. and was by the ſaid King placed at *Stamford*, and was Steward of his Mother's Houſe the Counteſs of *Richmond*, and after was Squire of the Body, both to King *Hen.* VII. and to King *Hen.* VIII.

To all which, this Anſwerer ſaith, That ſo diligent a diſplaying of Genealogies by his own Hand-writing at this inſtant, when he handleth the Match of his Grand-child with *Arabella*, implyeth a further Secret than every Man doth look into eſpecially, *&c.*

The

neſt Line, and ancient Stock, and He and his Anceſtors hath long continued in Nobility, and bearing Arms, that is to ſay, Silver *a Chivron Ermile*, three *Moletts Sable* pierced of the *Field*; and for the remembrance and conſideration of the Nobility and Gentileneſs that I have known in the ſaid *Richard Greſhham*, by good Activity divers and ſundry ways, have given and granted unto Him and his Poſterity, certain new augmentation of Enſigns, and demonſtration of Arms, Helm, and Creſt, to be augmented and annexed to the ſame: The *Blazon* whereof appeareth in manner and form following, That is to ſay, Silver *a Chiveron Ermile*, three *Moletts* of fine Points, *Sable* pierced of the *Field*, a chief *Gules*, on the chief a *Pellicane* cloſe between two Legs of a Lion raized Gold, arm'd *Azure* upon his Creſt, a Graſhopper, *Cochant Gold* with a *Tuft* of *Graſs verte* ſet in *Wreath Gold* and *Gules*, the Mantelets *Gules*, double *Argent*, buttoned, and taſſeled Gold, as more plainly appeared depict in this Margent; to have and to hold to the ſaid *Richard Greſhham*, and his Poſterity, with their due Differences, to uſe and enjoy, to their Honour, for evermore. In witneſs whereof, I the ſaid Garter, principal King of Arms, hath ſigned this preſent Confirmation with my own Hand, and hath ſet there to the Seal of my Office of Garter, principal King of Arms of *Engliſh men*, and alſo the Seal of my Arms. Given at *London* the laſt day of *November*, in the Year of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, a Thouſand five hundred thirty and ſeven, and of the Reign of our Sovereign Lord King *Henry* the Eighth, by the Grace of God, King of *England*, and of *France*, Defender of

the

the Faith, Lord of *Ireland*, and in Earth the Supream Head of the Church of *England*: The 29th Year.

Garter, Principal King of Arms.

Tranſcribed out of the Original Grant.

To the Right Honourable the Commons of England *aſſembled in Parliament.*

The Humble Petition of the inferiour Clergy, [viz.] *of the Rectours, Vicars, and Curates of this Nation.*

Humbly ſheweth,

THAT your Petitioners do in all grateful manner acknowledge your indefatigable Endeavours to ſettle our Church upon the firm Baſis of Beautiful Uniformity, a Work of ſuch matchleſs Piety, that it can never be forgotten whilſt there remains a Generation of true Proteſtants. Nevertheleſs, there is a ſtrange prodigious Race of Men amongſt us, who are not at all affected with this unexpreſſible Mercy, but labour to ſhake off the Yoak [as they are pleaſed to term it,] of Government, as well Civil as Eccleſiaſtical.

We therefore your Petitioners, do with all Reverence beſeech this Honourable Houſe, to provide ſome timely cure for this Diſeaſe: And in

order thereunto, we in all humility beg leave to preſent you with theſe few Expedients, which being [as we humbly conceive,] ſo much to the Glory of God, the Good and Settlement of his Church, the Safety and Preſervation of our Sovereign and His Crown, and the Honour of our Nation, will not be rejected by this Honourable Houſe.

I. That you would endeavour by ſome ſevere Laws, to put a ſtop to the Increaſe and Growth of *Anabaptiſm* in this Kingdom; the People of that Perſuaſion being moſt active, fraudulent, and induſtrious, to make Proſelytes of the moſt Ignorant, and to rebaptize them by their Lay-Teachers.

II. That for the better obſervation of the Lord's Day, and for the promoting of Conformity, you would be pleaſed to advance the pecuniary Mulct of Twelve Pence for each Abſence from Divine Service, in proportion to the Degree, Quality, and Ability of the Delinquent, that ſo the Penalty may be of Force enough to conquer the Obſtinacy of the *Nonconformiſts*.

III. That you would relieve the Clergy in the gaining of their ſmaller Tythes, not exceeding the value of Forty Shillings by a leſs chargeable Way than coſtly Law-ſuits, which to them [eſpecially to poor Vicars, whoſe Maintenance is very mean by extraordinary Impoſitions, and multitude of introduced Cuſtoms,] is a remedy much more grievous than the Diſeaſe.

IV. That you would pleaſe to conſider, and to determine of ſome more equal manner of rating Subſidies upon the Clergy; the preſent meaſure thereof to them, bearing no proportion to the reſt of His Majeſty's Subjects.

V. That

V. That you pleaſe to retrieve ſome Expedient to augment the Maintenance of Vicars in Markets and great Towns, and of Curates under Lay Impropriators; ſuch of the Clergy's Maintenance being in no degree competent for their Pains and Labour, which we conceive to be the cauſe that the greateſt Congregations have generally Curates of the meaneſt Abilities.

VI. That you would compel ſuch obſtinate Perſons as refuſe to pay their due Rates and Aſſeſments, to the repair of their reſpective Pariſh Churches, and other Charges relating to the Worſhip of God, to be reſponſable for ſuch ſtubborn Refuſal to the Civil Magiſtrate, ſeeing they undervalue and deſpiſe all Eccleſiaſtical Authority.

And your Petitioners ſhall ever pray, &c.

A Copy of the CHARTER *to the* Eaſt-India *Company.*

CHARLES the Second, by the Grace of God, *&c.* To all to whom theſe Preſents ſhall come, Greeting. Whereas our Well-beloved Subjects, the Governor and Company of Merchants trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, have been of long time a Corporation, to the Honour and Profit of this Nation, and have enjoyed, and do enjoy divers Liberties, and Privileges, and Immunities, by force of ſeveral Letters Patents, and Charters heretofore granted to them by our late Royal Progenitors, Queen *Elizabeth* and King

James of Bleſſed Memory. And whereas we are given to underſtand, that of late divers Diſorders and Inconveniences have been committed as well by our own Subjects as Foreigners, to the great prejudice of the ſaid Company, and interruption of their Trade. Whereupon they have humbly beſought Us, to grant and confirm their ſaid Charters with ſome Alterations and Additions, tending to the Benefit and Advancement of their Trade and Traffick.

Know ye therefore, That We taking the Premiſes into our Royal Conſideration, and well weighing how highly it imports the Honour and Welfare of this our Realm, and of our good Subjects thereof, that all Diſorders and Inconveniences befalling the ſaid Corporation, ſhould be redreſſed; to which end, and out of an earneſt deſire that ſuch good and decent Orders may be eſtabliſhed and practiſed in the ſaid Corporation, as may tend to their Encouragement, and the promoting of the General Good, have of Our ſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge, and meer Motion, and at the Humble Petition of the ſaid Governour and Company, given, granted, ratified and confirmed, and by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs and Succeſſors, do give, grant, ratifie and confirm, unto Our ſaid Truſty and Well beloved Subjects, the Governour and Company of Merchants of *London* trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*: That they from henceforth for ever, be, and ſhall be one Body Corporate and Politick in Deed and in Name, by the Name of the Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*; and them by the Name of the Governour and the Company of Merchants of *London* trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, one Body Corporate and

and Politick in Deed and in Name, really and fully for ever, for Us, Our Heirs and Succeſſors. We do make, ordain, conſtitute, eſtabliſh, confirm, and declare by theſe Preſents; and that by the ſame Name of Governour and Company of Merchants of *London* trading into the *Eaſt Indies*. They ſhall have perpetual Succeſſion. And that They, and their Succeſſors, by the Name of the Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, be, and at all times hereafter, ſhall be Perſons able and capable in Law, and a Body Corporate and Politick, and capable in Law to have purchace, receive, poſſeſs, enjoy, and retain Lands, Rents, Privileges, Liberties, Juriſdictions, Franchiſes, and Hereditaments of what Kind, Nature, and Quality ſoever they be, to them and their Succeſſors; and alſo, to give, grant, demiſe, alien, aſſign, and diſpoſe Lands, Tenements, and Hereditaments, and to do and execute all and ſingular other things by the ſame Name, that to them ſhall or may appertain to do. And that they, and their Succeſſors, by the Name of the Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, may plead, and be impleaded, anſwer, and be anſwered, defend, and be defended, in whatſoever Court and Places, and before whatſoever Judges, and Juſtices, and other Perſons, and Officers, in all and ſingular Actions, Pleas, Suits, Quarrels, Cauſes, and Demands whatſoever, of whatſoever kind, nature, or ſort, in ſuch manner and form, as any other our Liege People of this our Realm of *England*, being Perſons able and capable in Law, may, or can have, purchaſe, receive, poſſeſs, enjoy, retain, give, grant, demiſe, alien, aſſign, diſpoſe, plead, defend, and be defended, releaſe,

and be releaſed, do, permit, and execute; and that the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and their Succeſſors, may have a common Seal, to ſerve for all the Cauſes and Buſineſs of them, and their Succeſſors: And that it ſhall and may be lawful to the ſaid Governour and Company, and their Succeſſors, the ſame Seal from time to time, at their Will and Pleaſure, to break, change, and make new, or alter, as to them ſhall ſeem expedient.

And further, We will, and by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors: We do ordain, that there ſhall be from henceforth, one of the ſame Company to be elected and appointed, in ſuch Form as hereafter in theſe Preſents is expreſſed, which ſhall be called the Governour of the ſaid Company: And that there ſhall be from henceforth, twenty four of the ſaid Company to be elected and appointed, in ſuch Form as hereafter in theſe Preſents is expreſs'd, which ſhall be called the Committees of the ſaid Company, who together with the Governour of the ſaid Company for the time being, ſhall have the direction of the Voyages of and for the ſaid Company, and the Proviſion of the Shipping, and Merchandizes thereunto belonging, and alſo the Sale of all Merchandizes, Goods, and other Things, returned in all, or any other Voyages, or Ships of, or for the ſaid Company, and managing, or handling of all other Buſineſs, Affairs, and Things belonging to the ſaid Company.

And We will, ordain, and grant by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and their Succeſſors, That they the ſaid Governour and

and Company, and their Succeſſors, ſhall from henceforth for ever be ruled, ordered, and governed, according to ſuch manner and form, as is hereafter in theſe Preſents expreſſed, and not otherwiſe, nor in any other ſort or form, and that they ſhall have, hold, retain, and enjoy the Grants, Liberties, Privileges, Juriſdictions, and Immunities only hereafter in theſe Preſents, granted, and expreſſed, and no other. And for the better execution of our ſaid Will, and Grant, in this behalf, we have aſſigned, nominated, conſtituted, and made; and by theſe Preſents, for Us, our Heirs, and Succeſſors, We do aſſign, nominate, conſtitute, and make Sir *Andrew Riccard*, Knight, to be the firſt and preſent Governour of the ſaid Company, and to continue in the ſaid Office from the Date of theſe Preſents, until the Tenth Day of *April* then next following, if the ſaid Sir *Andrew Riccard* ſhall ſo long live, and ſo, until a new Governour be choſen by the ſaid Company in form hereafter expreſſed; and alſo, we have aſſigned, nominated, and appointed, and by theſe Preſents, for Us, our Heirs, and Succeſſors, we do aſſign, nominate, conſtitute, and make *George* Lord *Berkley*, Sir *John Lewis*, Sir *William Thompſon*, Sir *Richard Ford*, Sir *James Drax*, Sir *John Frederick*, Sir *Theophilus Biddulph*, Sir *William Vincent*, Sir *Thomas Bludworth*, Sir *William Ryder*, Sir *Stephen White*, and Sir *George Smyth*, Knights; *William Love*, Eſq; *William Williams*, *John Jolliff*, *Peter Middleton*, *Thomas Kendall*, *Maurice Thompſon*, *Samuel Moyer*, *Chriſtopher Boone*, *Francis Clerk*, *John Maſcall*, *Thomas Pearle*, and *Chriſtopher Willoughby*, Gent. to be the Twenty four firſt, and preſent Committees of the ſaid Company, from the Date of theſe Preſents until the ſaid

Tenth Day of *April* then alſo next following, and ſo until new Committees ſhall be choſen in form hereafter expreſſed. And further, We will, and grant by theſe Preſents, for Us, our Heirs, and Succeſſors, unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, and their Succeſſors, that it ſhall and may be lawful to, and for the ſaid Governour and Company for the time being, or the more part of them preſent at any publick Aſſembly, commonly called the Court General holden for the ſaid Company, the Governour of the ſaid Company being always one, from time to time to elect, nominate, and appoint one of the ſaid Company to be Deputy to the ſaid Governour, which Deputy ſhall take a corporal Oath before the Governour, and five or more of the Committees of the ſaid Company for the time being, well, and faithfully, and truly, to execute his ſaid Office of Deputy to the ſaid Governour of the ſaid Company, and after his Oath ſo taken, ſhall, and may from time to time in the abſence of the ſaid Governour, exerciſe, and execute the Office of Governour of the ſaid Company, in ſuch ſort as the ſaid Governour ought to do. And further, We will, and grant, by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, and their Succeſſors, That they, or the greater part of them, whereof the Governour for the time being, or his Deputy to be one, from time to time, and at all times hereafter, ſhall, and may have Authority and Power Yearly, and every Year between the Tenth and the laſt Day of *April*, to aſſemble and meet together in ſome convenient Place to be appointed from

from time to time by the Governour, or in his abſence by the Deputy of the ſaid Governour for the time being, and that they being ſo aſſembled, it ſhall, and may be lawful to, and for the ſaid Governour, or Deputy of the ſaid Governour, and the ſaid Company for the time being, or the greater part of them which then ſhall happen to be preſent, whereof the Governour of the ſaid Company or his Deputy for the time being, to be one, to elect, and nominate one of the ſaid Company, which ſhall be Governour of the ſame Company for one whole Year from thence next following; which Perſon being ſo elected and nominated to be Governour of the ſaid Company, as is aforeſaid, before he be admitted to the execution of the ſaid Office, ſhall take a corporal Oath before the laſt Governour, being his Predeceſſor or his Deputy, and any Six, or more of the Committees of the ſaid Company for the time being: That he ſhall from time to time, well and truly execute the Office of Governour of the ſaid Company in all things concerning the ſame; and that immediately after the ſaid Oath ſo taken, he ſhall, and may execute and uſe the ſaid Office of Governour of the ſaid Company, for one whole Year from thence next following: And in like ſort, we will, and grant, That as well every one above-named, to be of the ſaid Company or Fellowſhip, as all others to be hereafter admitted, or free of the ſaid Company, ſhall take a corporal Oath before the Governour of the ſaid Company, or his Deputy, for the time being, being to ſuch effect as by the ſaid Governour and Company, or the more part of them, in any publick Court to be held for the ſaid Company, ſhall be in reaſonable manner ſet down,

and

and deviſed, before they ſhall be allowed or admitted to Trade or Traffique, as a Freeman of the ſaid Company. And further, We will, and grant, by theſe Preſents, for Us, our Heirs, and Succeſſors, unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and their Succeſſors, That the ſaid Governour, or Deputy of the ſaid Governour, and the Company, and their Succeſſors, for the time being, or the greater part of them, and whereof the Governour, or the Deputy of the Governour, from time to time, to be one, ſhall, and may from time to time, and at all times hereafter, have Authority and Power Yearly, and every Year, between the Tenth and the laſt Day of *April*, to aſſemble and meet together in ſome convenient Place, to be from time to time appointed by the ſaid Governour of the ſaid Company, or in his abſence by his Deputy; and that they being ſo aſſembled, it ſhall, and may be lawful to, and for the ſaid Governour, or his Deputy, and the Company for the time being, or the greater part of them, which then ſhall happen to be preſent, whereof the Governour of the ſaid Company, or his Deputy, for the time being, to be one, to elect and nominate Twenty four of the ſaid Company, which ſhall be Committees of the ſaid Company for one whole Year from thence next enſuing; which Perſons being ſo elected and nominated to be Committees of the ſaid Company as aforeſaid, before they be admitted to the execution of their ſaid Offices, ſhall take a corporal Oath before the Governour, or his Deputy, and any Five or more of the ſaid Committees of the ſaid Company, being their laſt Predeceſſors for the time being, that they, and every of them,

them, ſhall well and faithfully perform their ſaid Office of Committees in all things concerning the ſame; and that immediately after the Oath ſo taken, they ſhall, and may execute and uſe their ſaid Offices of Committees of the ſaid Company for one whole Year from thence next following.

And moreover, Our Will and Pleaſure is, and by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, we do grant unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and to their Succeſſors, That when, and as often as it ſhall happen, the Governour of the ſaid Company for the time being, at any time within one Year after, that he ſhall be nominated, elected, and ſworn to the Office of the Governour of the ſaid Company, as is aforeſaid, to die, or to be removed from the ſaid Office; which Governour not demeaning himſelf well in his ſaid Office, We will to be removable at the pleaſure of the ſaid Company, or the greater part of them, which ſhall be preſent at any their publick Aſſemblies, commonly called their General Court holden for the ſaid Company: That then, and ſo often it ſhall, and may be lawful to, and for the reſidue of the ſaid Company for the time being, or the greater part of them, within convenient time, after the Death or removing of any ſuch Governours, to aſſemble themſelves in ſuch convenient place as they ſhall think fit for the Election of the Governour of the ſaid Company; and that the ſaid Company, or the greater part of them, being then and there preſent, ſhall, and may then and there, before their Departure from the ſaid Place elect, and nominate one other of the ſaid Company to be Governour of the ſame Company, in the

the place and ſtead of him that ſo died, or was removed; which Perſon being ſo elected and nominated to the Office of Governour of the ſaid Company, ſhall have, and exerciſe the ſaid Office for, and during the reſidue of the ſaid Year, taking firſt a corporal Oath, as is aforeſaid, for the due execution thereof, and this to be done from time to time, ſo often as the Caſe ſhall ſo require. And alſo, Our Will and Pleaſure is, and by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, We do grant unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, and to their Succeſſors, That when, and as often as it ſhall happen, any of the Committees of the ſaid Company for the time being, at any time within one Year next after, that they, or any of them, ſhall be nominated, elected, and ſworn to the Office of Committees of the ſaid Company, as is aforeſaid, to die, or be removed from the ſaid Office, which Committees not demeaning themſelves well in their ſaid Office, We will to be removable at the pleaſure of the ſaid Governour and Company, or the greater part of them, whereof the Governour of the ſaid Company for the time being, or his Deputy, to be one: That then, and ſo often it ſhall, and may be lawful to, and for the ſaid Governour and Company for the time being, or the greater part of them, whereof the Governour for the time being, or his Deputy, to be one, within convenient time after the Death or Removing of any of the ſaid Committees, to aſſemble themſelves in ſuch convenient place, as is, or ſhall be uſual and accuſtomed for the Election of the Governour of the ſaid Company, or where elſe the Governour of the ſaid Company for the time being, or his Deputy, ſhall appoint, and

and that the ſaid Governour and Company, or the greater part of them, whereof the Governour for the time being, or his Deputy, to be one; being then and there preſent, ſhall, and may then and there, before their Departure from the ſaid Place elect, and nominate one or more of the ſaid Company to be Committee or Committees, in the places, ſteads, place or ſtead of him or them that ſo died, or were or was ſo removed; which Perſon or Perſons ſo elected, and nominated to the Office or Offices of Committee or Committees of the ſaid Company, ſhall have, and exerciſe the ſaid Office and Offices for, and during the reſidue of the ſaid Year, taking firſt a corporal Oath as is aforeſaid, for the due execution thereof; and this to be done from time to time, ſo often as the Caſe ſhall require.

And further, We do by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, will and grant unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, and their Succeſſors, That they, and all that are or ſhall be of the ſaid Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and every of them, and all the Sons of them, and every of them, at their ſeveral Ages of one and twenty Years, or upwards: And further, That all ſuch the Apprentices, Factors, and Servants of them, and every of them, which hereafter ſhall be employed by the ſaid Governour and Company in the ſaid Trade of Merchandize of, or to the *Eaſt-Indies* beyond the Seas, or any other the Places aforeſaid, ſhall, and may from henceforth for ever, from the Day of the Date of theſe Preſents, freely Traffick, and uſe the Trade of Merchandize by Seas, in, and by ſuch Ways and Paſſages already

ready found out, and diſcovered, as they ſhall eſteem, and take to be fitteſt into, and from the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, in the Countries and Parts of *Aſia*, and *Africa*, and into, and from the Iſlands, Parts, Havens, Cities, Creeks, Towns and Places of *Aſia*, *Africa*, and *America*, or any of them beyond the Cape of *Bona Sperancia* to the Streights of *Magellan*, where any Trade or Traffique of Merchandize may be uſed or had, and to, and from every of them, in ſuch order, manner, form, liberty and condition, to all intents and purpoſes as ſhall be from time to time at any publick Aſſembly, or Court holden by, or for the ſaid Governour and Company, by, or between them of the ſaid Fellowſhip, or Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, or the more part of them for the time being, preſent at ſuch Aſſembly or Court, the Governour or his Deputy being always preſent at ſuch Court or Aſſembly, limited and agreed, and not otherwiſe, without any Moleſtation, Impeachment, or Diſturbance, any Statute, Uſage, Diverſity of Religion, or Faith, or any other Cauſe or Matter whatſoever to the contrary notwithſtanding, ſo always the ſame Trade be not undertaken, or addreſſed to any Country, Iſland, Port, Haven, City, Creek, Town, or Place, already in the lawful and actual poſſeſſion of any ſuch Chriſtian Prince, or State, as at this preſent is, or at any time hereafter ſhall be in League or Amity, with Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, and who doth not or will not accept of ſuch Trade, but doth overtly declare, and publiſh the ſame, to be utterly againſt his and their good Will and Liking. And further, Our Will and Pleaſure is, and by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, We

do

do grant unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and to their Succeſſors, That it ſhall, and may be lawful to, and for the ſaid Governour and Company, and their Succeſſors, from time to time, to aſſemble themſelves for, or about any of the Matters, Cauſes, Affairs, or Buſineſs of the ſaid Trade, in any Place or Places for the ſame, convenient, within our Dominions, or elſewhere, and there to hold Court for the ſaid Company, and the Affairs thereof; and that alſo, it ſhall, and may be lawful to, and for them, or the moſt part of them, being ſo aſſembled, and that ſhall then and there be preſent in any ſuch Place, or Places, whereof the Governour or his Deputy for the time being, to be one, to make, ordain, and conſtitute ſuch, and ſo many reaſonable Laws, Conſtitutions, Orders, and Ordinances, as to them, or the greater part of them, being then and there preſent, ſhall ſeem neceſſary and convenient, for the good Government of the ſaid Company, and of all Factors, Maſters, Mariners, and other Officers employed, or to be employed in any of their Voyages. And for the better advancement and continuance of the ſaid Trade or Traffique, and the ſame Laws, Conſtitutions, Orders and Ordinances ſo made, to put in ure, and execute accordingly, and at their pleaſure to revoke, or alter the ſame, or any of them, as occaſion ſhall require, and that the ſaid Governour and Company, ſo often as they ſhall make, ordain, or eſtabliſh any ſuch Laws, Conſtitutions, Orders, and Ordinances in form aforeſaid, ſhall, and may lawfully impoſe, ordain, limit, and provide ſuch Pains, Puniſhments, and Penalties, by impriſonment of Body, or by Fines and Amerciaments, or by all

or

or any of them, upon or againſt all Offenders, contrary to ſuch Laws, Conſtitutions, Orders, and Ordinances, or any of them, as to the ſaid Governour and Company for the time being, or the greater part of them then and there being preſent, [the ſaid Governour or his Deputy being always one,] ſhall ſeem neceſſary, requiſite, and convenient, for the obſervation of the ſame Laws, Conſtitutions, Orders, and Ordinances; and the ſame Fines and Amerciaments ſhall, and may, by their Officers and Servants, from time to time to be appointed for that purpoſe, levy, take, and have, to the uſe of the ſaid Governour and Company, and their Succeſſors, without the impediment of Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, or any of the Officers, or Miniſters, of Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, and without any Account therefore to Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, to be made. All and ſingular which Laws, Conſtitutions, Orders, and Ordinances, ſo as aforeſaid to be made, We will to be duly obſerved, and kept, under the Pains and Penalties therein to be contained, ſo always as the ſaid Laws, Conſtitutions, Orders, and Ordinances, Impriſonments, Fines and Amerciaments, be reaſonable, and not contrary or repugnant to the Laws, Statutes, or Cuſtoms of this our Realm.

And alſo, of Our further ſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge, and meer Motion, We do, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, grant to, and with the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and their Succeſſors, That when, and as often as any Cuſtom, Poundage, Subſidy, or other Duties, ſhall be due, and payable unto Us, our Heirs, or Succeſſors,

ceſſors, for any Goods, Wares, or Merchandizes whatſoever, to be returned out, or from any of the Iſlands, Ports, Havens, Cities, Towns, or Places aforeſaid, unto Our Port of *London*, or any of the Havens, Creeks, Members, or Places to the ſame Port belonging, that the Cuſtomers, and all other Officers for the time being, for Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, for or concerning the Receipt of Cuſtom, Poundage, Subſidies, or other Duties, unto whom it ſhall or may appertain, ſhall upon the requeſt of the Governour and Company of the ſaid Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, or any of their Agents, Factors, or Aſſigns, give unto the ſaid Governour and Company, their Agents, Factors, or Aſſigns, ſix Months time for the Payment of the other half of their ſaid Cuſtom, Poundage, or other Subſidies, or Duties, receiving good ſufficient Bond with Surety, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, for the true payment of the ſame accordingly; and upon receipt of the ſame with Surety from time to time, to give unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies* for the time being, their Agents, Factors, or Aſſigns, their Cocquets, or other Warrants to take out, and receive on Land, the ſame Goods, Wares, and Merchandizes, by virtue hereof without any diſturbance; and that alſo, as often as any Goods, Wares, or Merchandizes of the ſaid Governour and Company for the time being, laden from our Port of *London*, or any of the Creeks, Members, or Places, to the ſame Port belonging, to be tranſported to, or towards any of the Iſlands, Ports, Havens, Cities, Towns, or Places aforeſaid, ſhall happen to miſcarry, or be loſt, before their ſafe

arrival, or diſcharge in the Ports for, and to which the ſame ſhall be ſent, that then, and ſo often ſo much Cuſtom, Poundage, Subſidy, or other Duties, as they are anſwered to Us for the ſame, before their going forth of our ſaid Ports, Havens, or Creeks, ſhall, after due Proof made before the Treaſurer of Our Realm of *England* for the time being, of the ſaid Loſs, and the juſt Quantity thereof, be by virtue hereof allowed to the ſaid Governour and Company, their Agents, or Factors, by Warrant of the ſaid Treaſurer, to the ſaid Cuſtomers, or Officers, in the next Goods, Wares, or Merchandizes, that the ſaid Governour and Company, or their Succeſſors, ſhall, or may ſhip for, or towards thoſe Parts, according to the true Rates of the Cuſtoms, Poundage, Subſidies, before paid for the Goods, Wares, or Merchandizes ſo loſt, or miſcarried, or any part of them. And for that the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, are like to bring into this Realm a much greater quantity of Foreign Commodities from the Parts of the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, than can be ſpent for the neceſſary uſe of the ſame Our Realm, which of neceſſity muſt be tranſported into other Countries, and there vented: We for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, of our eſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge, and meer Motion, do grant to, and with the ſaid Governour, and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and their Succeſſors, that at all times from time to time during the ſpace of thirteen Months next after the diſcharge of any the ſame Foreign Commodities ſo to be brought in, [the Subſidies, Poundage, Cuſtoms, and other Duties for the ſame, being firſt paid, and compounded

pounded for as aforeſaid,] it ſhall, and may be lawful for the ſaid Governour and Company, and their Succeſſors, or any other the natural Subjects of this Our Realm, which may, or ſhall buy the ſame, to tranſport the ſame in *Engliſh* Bottoms freely out of this Realm, without payment of any further Cuſtoms, Poundages, or any further Subſidy, to Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, for the ſame; whereof the Subſidy, Poundage, Cuſtoms, or other Duties, ſhall be ſo formerly paid, or compounded for, as aforeſaid, and ſo proved; and the ſaid Cuſtomers, or other Officer, or Officers, to whom it ſhall in that behalf appertain for the time being, by virtue hereof, ſhall upon due and ſufficient proof thereof, made in the Cuſtom-Houſe of, or belonging to the ſame Port of *London*, give them ſufficient Cocquets, or Certificate, for the ſafe paſſing out thereof accordingly; and to the end no deceit be uſed herein, to Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, Certificate ſhall be brought from the Collector of the Cuſtoms, Subſidy, Poundage, or other Duties inwards, of Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, to the Collector of the Cuſtoms, Poundage, Subſidy, or other Duties outwards, of Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, that the ſaid Goods, Wares, or Merchandizes, have within the time limited, anſwered their due Cuſtom, Poundage, Subſidy, or other Duties for the ſame inwards. And moreover, We of Our further eſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge, and meer Motion, have granted, and by theſe Preſents do, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, grant unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, and their Succeſſors, that it ſhall, and may be lawful to, and for the ſaid Governour and Company, and their Succeſſors, to

ſhip, and tranſport out of this Our Realm, or Dominions of the ſame, in any of their Voyages to, or towards any the Parts aforeſaid, all ſuch Foreign Coin of Silver, *Spaniſh*, or other Foreign Silver, or Bullion of Silver, as they ſhall bring, or cauſe to be brought into this Realm of *England* from the Parts beyond the Seas, either in the ſame kind, ſort, ſtamp, or faſhion, which it ſhall have when they bring it in, or any other form, ſtamp, or faſhion, to be coined within our Mint within our *Tower* of *London* at their pleaſure, ſo as the whole quantities of Coin or Monies by them to be tranſported in any their ſaid Voyages, do not exceed the Value or Sum of Fifty thouſand Pounds in any one Voyage. And further, We of Our more ample and abundant Grace, meer Motion, and certain Knowledge, have granted, and by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, do grant unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, and to their Succeſſors, That they and their Succeſſors, and their Factors, and Servants, and Aſſigns, in the Trade of Merchandize, for them, and on their behalf, and not otherwiſe, ſhall for ever hereafter, have, uſe, and enjoy the Whole entire, and only Trade, and Traffique, and the Whole entire, and only Liberty, Uſe, and Privilege of Trading and Traffiquing, and uſing the Feat and Trade of Merchandize to, and from the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, and to, and from all the Iſlands, Ports, Havens, Cities, Towns, and Places aforeſaid, in ſuch manner and form as is above-mentioned; and that they the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and every particular, and ſeveral Perſon that now is, or that hereafter

ſhall

ſhall be of that Company or Incorporation, ſhall have full and free Authority, Liberty, Faculty, Licenſe, and Power, in Form aforeſaid, to Trade and Traffique to, and from the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, and all, and every of the Parts thereof in Form aforeſaid, according to the Orders, Ordinances, and Agreements hereafter, to be made and agreed upon by the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, and their Succeſſors, or the more part of them preſent at any Court, or Publick Aſſembly of, or for the ſaid Company, the Governour of the ſaid Company, or his Deputy for the time being, being always preſent at ſuch Court or Aſſembly, and not otherwiſe. And for that the Ships ſailing into the *Eaſt Indies*, muſt take their due and proper times to proceed in their Voyages, which otherwiſe [as We well perceive,] cannot be performed in the reſt of the Year following; therefore We of our ſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge, and meer Motion, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, do grant to, and with the ſaid Governour, and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and their Succeſſors, and that in any time of Reſtraint, ſix good Ships, and ſix good Pinances well furniſhed with Ordnance, and other Munition, for their Defence, and Five hundred of Mariners *Engliſh men*, to guide and ſail in the ſaid Six Ships and Six Pinnaces, at all times, ſhall be quietly permitted, and ſuffered to depart, and go in the ſaid Voyages, according to the purport of theſe Preſents, without any ſtay or contradiction, by Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, or by the Lord Admiral, or any other Officer or Subjects, of Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, for the time being in any wiſe, any Reſtraint, Law, Sta-

tute, Uſage, or Matter whatſoever to the contrary notwithſtanding: Provided nevertheleſs, that if We ſhall at any time, have juſt cauſe to Arm our Navy in Warlike manner, in Defence of Our Realm, or for Offence of Our Enemies, or that it ſhall be found needful to join to the Navy, of Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, the Ships of Our Subjects to be alſo armed for the Wars to ſuch a number as cannot be ſupplied, if the ſaid Six Ships and Six Pinnaces, ſhould be permitted to depart, as above is mentioned: Then upon Knowledge given, by Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, or by our Admiral, to the ſaid Governour and Company, about the twentieth Day of the Month of *July*, or three Months before the ſaid Governour and Company, ſhall begin to make ready the ſame Six Ships and Six Pinnaces, that we may not ſpare the ſaid Six Ships and Six Pinnaces, and the Mariners requiſite for them, to be out of Our Realm during the time that our Navy ſhall be upon the Seas: That then the ſaid Governour and Company ſhall forbear to ſend Six ſuch Ships and Six Pinnaces for their Trade of Merchandizes, until that we ſhall revoke or withdraw Our ſaid Navy from the ſaid Service. And We of Our further Royal Favour, and of Our more eſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge, and meer Motion, have granted, and by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, do grant to the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and to their Succeſſors, that the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, or the Iſlands, Havens, Ports, Cities, Towns, or Places thereof, or any part thereof, ſhall not be viſited, frequented, or haunted by any of the Subjects, of Us, Our Heirs or Succeſſors, during the time that theſe

Our

Our Letters Patents ſhall be or remain in force, and not revoked or repealed, contrary to the true meaning of theſe Preſents. And by virtue of Our Prerogative Royal, which We will not in that behalf, argued or brought in queſtion; We ſtraitly charge, command, and prohibit, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, all the Subjects, of Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, of what Degree or Quality ſoever they be, That none of them, directly or indirectly, do viſit, haunt, frequent, or trade, Traffique, or adventure by way of Merchandize, into, or from any of the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, or into, and from any of the Iſlands, Ports, Havens, Cities, Towns, or Places aforeſaid, other than the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and ſuch particular Perſons as now be, and hereafter ſhall be of that Company, their Agents, Factors, and Aſſigns, during the time that theſe Our Letters Patents, ſhall be or remain in force, as aforeſaid, unleſs it be by, and with the Licenſe and Agreement of the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, in writing firſt had and obtained under their common Seal, to be granted upon pain, that every ſuch Perſon, or Perſons, that ſhall Trade or Traffique into, or from any of the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, and their Succeſſors, ſhall incur our Indignation, and the forfeiture and the loſs of the Goods, Merchandizes, and other things whatſoever, which ſo ſhall be brought into this Realm of *England*, or any the Dominions of the ſame, contrary to Our ſaid Prohibition, or the Purport, or the true meaning of theſe Preſents, or which the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, ſhall find, take, and ſeize, in other Places

out of our Dominions, where the ſaid Company, their Servants, Factors, or Miniſters, ſhall trade and traffique by virtue of theſe our Letters Patents: As alſo, the Ship and Ships, with the Furniture therein, wherein ſuch Goods and Merchandizes ſhall be brought, or ſhall be found, the one half of all the ſaid Forfeitures to be to Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, and the other half of all and every the ſaid Forfeitures, We do by theſe Preſents of our ſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge, and meer Motion, clearly and wholly, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, give and grant unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and their Succeſſors: And further, all and every of the ſaid Offenders for the ſaid Contempt, to ſuffer Impriſonment during Our Pleaſure, and ſuch other Puniſhment as to Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, for ſo high a Contempt ſhall ſeem meet and convenient, and not to be in any wiſe delivered, until they, and every of them ſhall become bound unto the ſaid Governour for the time being, in the Sum of One thouſand Pounds at the leaſt, at no time than after to ſail or traffique into any of the ſaid *Eaſt Indies*, contrary to our expreſs Commandment in that behalf herein ſet down and publiſhed. And further, for the better Encouragement of Merchant-Strangers, and others, to bring in Commodities into Our Realm, We, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, do grant unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, That They and their Succeſſors may from time to time, for any conſideration or benefit to be taken to their own Uſe, Grant, or give Licenſe to any Perſon or Perſons, to ſail, trade, or traffique into, or from any

any the ſaid *Eaſt Indies*, ſo as ſuch Licenſe be granted, or given, before ſuch Goods, Wares, and Merchandizes be laid on Land, and ſo as ſuch Licenſe be made by the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies* for the time being, under their Common Seal.

And further, of Our ſpecial Grace, certain Knowledge, and meer Motion, We have condeſcended, and granted, and by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, We do condeſcend and grant unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, and their Succeſſors, That We, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, during all the time that theſe Our Letters Patents ſhall be, and remain in force, as aforeſaid, will not grant Liberty, Licenſe, or Power to any Perſon or Perſons whatſoever, contrary to the Tenour of theſe Our Letters Patents, to ſail, paſs, trade, or traffique to the ſaid *Eaſt Indies*, or into, or from any of the Iſlands, Ports, Havens, Cities, Towns, or Places aforeſaid, or any of them, contrary to the true meaning of theſe Preſents, without the conſent of the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, or the moſt part of them. And of Our abundant Grace and Favour to the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, We do hereby declare, That Our Will and Pleaſure is, that if it ſhall ſo happen, that any of the Perſons free, or to be free of the ſaid Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, who ſhall before the going forth of any Ship or Fleet appointed for a Voyage, or otherwiſe promiſe or agree by Writing,

ting, under his or their Hands, to adventure any Sum or Sums of Money towards the furniſhing Proviſion, or Maintenance of any Voyage or Voyages, ſet forth, or to be ſet forth, or intended, or meant, to be ſet forth by the ſaid Governour, or the more part of them preſent at any Publick Aſſembly, commonly called their General Court, ſhall not within the ſpace of twenty Days next after Warning, given to him or them by the ſaid Governour and Company, or their known Officer, or Miniſter bring in, and deliver to the Treaſurer or Treaſurers appointed for the Company, ſuch Sums of Money as ſhall have been expreſs'd, and ſet down in Writing by the ſaid Perſon or Perſons ſubſcribing, with the Name of the ſaid Adventurer or Adventurers: That then, and at all times, after it ſhall and may be lawful to, and for the ſaid Governour and Company, or the more part of them preſent, whereof the ſaid Governour or his Deputy to be one, at any of their General Courts or Aſſemblies, to remove, and disfranchiſe him or them, and every ſuch Perſon or Perſons, at their Wills and Pleaſures; and he, or they, ſo removed and disfranchiſed, not to be permitted to trade into the ſaid *Eaſt Indies*, or any the Parts thereof, nor to have any Adventure or Stock going or remaining with, or amongſt the ſaid Company, without the ſpecial Licenſe of the ſaid Governour and Company, or the more part of them preſent at any General Court firſt had, and obtained in that behalf, any thing before in theſe Preſents to the contrary thereof in any wiſe notwithſtanding. And Our Will and Pleaſure is, and hereby we do alſo ordain, that it ſhall and may be lawful to, and for the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants

of

of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, or the more part of them, whereof the Governour for the time being, or his Deputy, to be one, to admit into, and to be of the ſaid Company, all ſuch Apprentices to any of the ſaid Fellowſhip or Company, and all Servants, or Factors of, or for the ſaid Company, and all ſuch others, as to them, or to the moſt part of them preſent, at any Court held for the ſaid Company, the Governour or his Deputy being one, ſhall be thought fit, and agreeable with the Orders and Ordinances made, and to be made, for the Government of the ſaid Company. And the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, for them and their Succeſſors, do by theſe Preſents, covenant, promiſe, and grant to, and with Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, That they the ſaid Governour and Company, and their Succeſſors, in all and every ſuch Wages, as they at any time or times hereafter, ſhall make out of this Our Realm, by virtue of this Our Grant, and Letters Patents, [the firſt Voyage only excepted,] ſhall and will upon every Return which ſhall be made back again into this Realm, or any of Our Dominions, or within ſix Months next after every ſuch Return, bring into this Our Realm of *England*, from the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, or from ſome other Parts beyond the Seas, out of Our Dominions, as great or greater Value in Bullion, of Gold or Silver, reſpectively for every Voyage, [the firſt Voyage only excepted,] as ſhall be by force of theſe Preſents tranſported and carried out of this Realm by them, or any of them, in any kind of Silver aboveſaid whatſoever, in any of the ſaid Voyages, and that all ſuch Silver, as by virtue of this Our Grant, and

Letters

Letters Patents, ſhall be ſhipped or laden by the ſaid Governour and Company, or their Succeſſors, to be tranſported out of this Realm in any of the ſaid Voyages, ſhall from time to time, at the ſetting forth of every ſuch particular Voyage, be ſhipped or laden at the Ports, or Havens of *London*, *Dartmouth*, or *Plymouth*, or at ſome of the ſame Ports, or Havens, and at no other Port or Haven whatſoever, within this Our Realm, or the Dominions thereof. And that all and every ſuch Silver as from time to time, ſhall be ſhipped and laden in the ſaid Ports of *London*, *Dartmouth*, or *Plymouth*, or any of them, to be by force of theſe Preſents tranſported out of this Our Realm, as is aforeſaid, ſhall from time to time be duly entred by the Cuſtomer, Comptroler, Collector, or other Officer, to whom it ſhall appertain, of every ſuch Port, or Haven, where the ſame ſhall happen to be ſhipped or laden, to be tranſported as aforeſaid, without any Cuſtom or Subſidy to be paid for the ſame; and that in like manner, all, and all manner of Gold and Silver, which ſhall be brought into this Our Realm, or any of Our Dominions, by the ſaid Governour and Company, or any of them, according to the true meaning of theſe Preſents, ſhall likewiſe be from time to time entered by the Cuſtomer, Comptroler, or other Officer, of every ſuch Port, Creek, or Place, where the ſame Gold or Silver ſhall happen to be unſhipped, or brought to Land, before ſuch time as the ſame Gold or Silver, or any part thereof ſhall be unſhipped, and brought to Land as aforeſaid, according to ſuch Order as by Our Treaſurer of *England* for the time being, ſhall be taken for the Entring of the ſame. And for the preventing of ſecret and clandeſtine Trading, contrary

trary to Our Intentions herein before expreſſed, Our further Will and Pleaſure is, and We do for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, grant unto the ſaid Governour and Company, and their Succeſſors, That no Commiſſioner, or other Officers, that are, or ſhall be appointed to manage the Affairs of the Cuſtoms, payable unto Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, ſhall permit any Entries to be made, of any Goods or Merchandizes of the Growth, Production, or Manufacture of the Parts or Places aforeſaid, in *Aſia*, *Africa*, and *America*, above limited, or appropriated to the Trade of the ſaid Governour and Company, other than ſuch as from time to time ſhall be allowed of by the ſaid Governour and Company, or their Succeſſors, by their Common Seal, or the Hand of the Officer, to be by them appointed to ſit in the Cuſtom houſe for that purpoſe.

And further, Our Will and Pleaſure is, and by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, We do grant unto the ſaid Governour, and Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, and to their Succeſſors, That it ſhall and may be lawful in all Elections, and By-Laws to be made by the General Court of the Adventurers of the ſaid Company, That every Perſon ſhall have a number of Votes, according to his Stock, that is to ſay, for every Five hundred Pounds by him ſubſcribed, or brought into the preſent Stock, one Vote; and that any of thoſe that have ſubſcribed or brought leſs than Five hundred Pounds, may join their reſpective Sums to make up Five hundred Pounds, and have one Vote jointly for the ſame, and not otherwiſe.

And further, of Our eſpecial Grace, and certain Knowledge, and meer Motion, We do, for Us,

Our

Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, grant to, and with the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, and their Succeſſors, That all Plantations, Forts, Fortifications, Factories, or Colonies, where the ſaid Companies, Factories, and Trade are, or ſhall be in the *Eaſt-Indies*, ſhall be immediately and from henceforth under the power and commandment of the ſaid Governour and Company, their Succeſſors and Aſſigns; and that the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, ſhall have Liberty, full Power and Authority, to appoint and eſtabliſh Governours, and all other Officers to govern them; and that the Governour and his Council of the ſeveral reſpective Places, where the ſaid Company have, or ſhall have any Factories or Places of Trade within the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, may have power to judge all Perſons belonging to the ſaid Governour and Company, or that ſhall live under them, in all Cauſes whether Civil or Criminal, according to the Laws of this Kingdom, and to execute Judgment accordingly; and in caſe any Crime or Miſdemeanor ſhall be committed in any of the ſaid Companies Factories in the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, where Judicature cannot be executed as aforeſaid, for want of a Governour or Council there, then, in ſuch caſe, it ſhall and may be lawful for the chief Factor of that Place, and his Council, to tranſmit the Party together with the Offence, to ſuch other Plantation, Factory, or Fort, where there is a Governour and Council, where Juſtice may be executed, or into this Kingdom of *England*, as ſhall be thought moſt convenient, there to receive ſuch Puniſhment as the Juſtice of his Offence ſhall deſerve.

And

And moreover, Our Will and Pleaſure is, and by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, We do give and grant unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading to the *Eaſt-Indies*, and ther Succeſſors, free Liberty and Licenſe for the ſaid Governour and Company, in caſe they conceive it neceſſary, to ſend either Ships of War, Men, or Ammunition, into any their Factories, or other Places of their Trade in the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, for Security and Defence of the ſame, and to chuſe Commanders and Officers over them, and to give them Power and Authority by Commiſſions, under their Common Seal, or otherwiſe, to continue, or make Peace or War with any Prince or People that are not Chriſtians, in any Places of their Trade, as ſhall be moſt for the advantage and benefit of the ſaid Governour and Company, and of their Trade, and alſo to right and recompence themſelves upon the Goods, Eſtate, or People of thoſe Parts, by whom the ſaid Governour and Company ſhall ſuſtain any Injury, Loſs, or Damage; or upon any other People whatſoever, that ſhall any ways interrupt, wrong, or injure them in their ſaid Trade, within the ſaid Places, Territories, and Limits, granted unto the ſaid Governour and Company, or their Succeſſors, by this Charter; and that it ſhall, and may be lawful to, and for the ſaid Governour and Company, and their Succeſſors, from time to time, and at all times from henceforth, to erect, and build ſuch Caſtles, Fortifications, Forts, Gariſons, Colonies, or Plantations, at St. *Helena*, as alſo elſewhere within the Limits and Bounds of Trade, granted unto the ſaid Governour and Company, as aforeſaid, as they in their Diſcretions ſhall think fit and requiſite;

fare; and for the ſupplying of ſuch as ſhall be requiſite, to keep, and be in the ſame, to ſend out of this Kingdom to the ſaid Caſtles, Fortifications, Forts, Gariſons, Colonies or Plantations, all kind of Cloathing, Proviſion of Victuals, Ammunition, and Implements neceſſary for ſuch purpoſe; without paying of any Cuſtoms, Subſidy, or other Duty for the ſame: As alſo, to tranſport and carry over ſuch number of Men, being willing thereto, as they ſhall think fit, and alſo to govern them in ſuch legal and reaſonable manner as the ſaid Governour and Company ſhall think fit, and to inflict Puniſhment for Miſdemeanor, or impoſe ſuch Fines upon them for Breach of their Orders, as in theſe Preſents are formerly expreſſed.

And further, Our Will and Pleaſure is, and by theſe Preſents, for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, We do grant unto the ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt Indies*, and to their Succeſſors, full Power and lawful Authority, to ſeize upon the Perſons of all ſuch *Engliſh*, or any other Our Subjects in the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, which ſhall fail in any *Indian* or *Engliſh* Veſſel, or inhabit in thoſe Parts, without the Leave and Licenſe of the ſaid Governour and Company in that behalf firſt had and obtained, or that ſhall contemn or diſobey their Orders, and ſend them to *England*. And that all and every Perſon or Perſons, being our Subjects, any ways employed by the ſaid Governour and Company in the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, or any other Place within the Parts, Places, or Limits before by theſe Preſents, granted unto the ſaid Governour and Company, ſhall be liable unto, and ſuffer ſuch Puniſhment for any Offences by them committed

committed in the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, and Parts before granted, as the Preſident and Council for the ſaid Governour and Company there ſhall think fit, and the Merit of the Offence ſhall require; and in caſe any Perſon or Perſons being convicted and ſentenced by the Preſident and Council of the ſaid Governour and Company in the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, their Factors or Agents there, for any Offence by them done, ſhall appeal from the ſame; That then, and in every ſuch Caſe, it ſhall and may be lawful for the ſaid Preſident and Council, Factors or Agents, to ſeize upon him or them, and to carry him or them Priſoners into *England* to the ſaid Governour and Company there, to receive ſuch condign Puniſhment as the Merits of his Cauſe ſhall require, and the Laws of this Nation allow of; and for the better diſcovery of Abuſes and Injuries to be done unto the ſaid Governour and Company, or their Succeſſors, by any their Servants by them employed in the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, or Voyages thither, it ſhall and may be lawful to, and for the ſaid Governour and Company, and reſpective Preſidents, chief Agent, or Governour in the ſaid *Eaſt-Indies*, to examine upon Oath all Factorers, Maſters, Purſers, *ſupra* Cargoes, Commanders of Caſtles, Forts, Fortifications, Plantations, or Colonies, and other Perſons, touching or concerning any Matter or thing in which by Law and Uſage an Oath may be adminiſtred, ſo as the ſaid Oath and the Matter therein contained, be not repugnant to the Laws of this Our Realm. Provided always nevertheleſs, and Our Will and Pleaſure is, That theſe Our Letters Patents, or any thing therein contained, ſhall not in any ſort extend to give or grant any Licenſe, Power or Authority, unto the

ſaid Governour and Company of Merchants of *London*, trading into the *Eaſt-Indies*, or to any of them, to undertake or addreſs any Trade into any Country, Port, Iſland, Haven, City, Creek, Town, or Place already in the lawful and actual Poſſeſſion of any ſuch Chriſtian Prince or State, as at this preſent, or at any time hereafter ſhall be in League or Amity with Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, and which doth not or will not accept of ſuch Trade, but doth overtly declare and publiſh the ſame to be utterly againſt his or their good Will and Liking, any thing before in theſe Preſents contained to the contrary thereof notwithſtanding. Provided alſo, That if it ſhall hereafter appear to Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, that this Grant, or the continuance thereof in the whole, or any part thereof, ſhall not be profitable for Us, Our Heirs, and Succeſſors, or to this Our Realm; That then, and from thenceforth upon, and after Three Years Warning to be given to the ſaid Company, by Us, Our Heirs, or Succeſſors, under Our, or their Privy Seal, or Sign Manual, this preſent Grant ſhall ceaſe, be void, and termined, to all intents, conſtructions and purpoſes; willing hereby, and ſtraitly charging and commanding all and ſingular Our Admirals, Vice-Admirals, Juſtices, Mayors, Sheriffs, Eſcheators, Conſtables, Bailiffs, and all and ſingular other Our Officers, Miniſters, Liege-men, and Subjects whatſoever, to be aiding, fauguring, helping and aſſiſting to the ſaid Governour and Company, and to their Succeſſors, and to their Deputies, Officers, Factorers, Servants, Aſſigns, and Miniſters, and every of them, in executing and enjoying the Premiſes as well on Land as on Sea from time to time, when you or any of you ſhall be thereunto

unto required, any Statute, Act, Ordinance, Proviſo, Proclamation, or Reſtraint heretofore, had, made, ſet forth, ordained, or provided, or any other Matter, Cauſe, or Thing whatſoever to the contrary, in any wiſe notwithſtanding. In witneſs, *&c.* Witneſs Our Self at *Weſtminſter* the Third Day of *April*, in the Thirteenth Year of Our Reign.

May it pleaſe Your moſt Excellent Majeſty,

YOUR *Majeſty is hereby graciouſly pleaſed to confirm the* Charter *formerly granted by Your late Royal Grandfather King* James *of Bleſſed Memory, to the Governour and Company of Merchants of* London, *trading into the* Eaſt-Indies, *granting them ſuch ſeveral Additional Powers and Clauſes, as was humbly deſired and preſented in a Scheme to Your Majeſty.*

Signified to be Your Majeſty's Pleaſure under Your Royal Sign Manual.

20 *Martij* 1660. *G. Palmer.*

FINIS.

Rm